

ISSN 2520-4920(Print)
ISSN 2616-4566(Online)

Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature

文学跨学科研究

Volume 8, Number 3
September 2024



Published by
Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited
Hong Kong

Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature

文学跨学科研究

**Volume 8, Number 3
September 2024**

Editor

Nie Zhenzhao, Guangdong University of Foreign Studies

Associate Editors

Yang Gexin, Zhejiang University

Liu Maosheng, Guangdong University of Foreign Studies

Directors of Editorial Office

Yang Gexin, Zhejiang University

Ren Jie, Zhejiang University

Published by

Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited

Hong Kong

About: *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* (“ISL”) is a peer-reviewed journal sponsored by Guangdong University of Foreign Studies and Zhejiang University and published by Knowledge Hub Publishing Company (Hong Kong) in collaboration with the International Conference for Ethical Literary Criticism. With a strategic focus on literary, ethical, historical and interdisciplinary approaches, ISL encourages dialogues between literature and other disciplines of humanities, aiming to establish an international platform for scholars to exchange their innovative views that stimulate critical interdisciplinary discussions. ISL publishes four issues each year in both Chinese and English.

International Conference for Ethical Literary Criticism (ICELC, since 2012) is an annual international conference for academics and research-oriented scholars in the area of literature and related disciplines. ICELC is the flagship conference of the International Association for Ethical Literary Criticism which is an international literary and cultural organization aiming to link all those working in ethical literary criticism in theory and practice and to encourage the discussions of ethical function and value in literary works and criticism.

Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature is registered with ISSN 2520-4920(print) and 2616-4566(online), and is indexed by Arts and Humanities Citation Index. It is also included in EBSCO, MLA International Bibliography and Annual Bibliography of English Language and Literature.

Submissions and subscription: As the official journal of International Association for Ethical Literary Criticism (IAELC), *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* publishes articles only from members of IAELC, and their submissions presented in the annual convention and forums will be accepted for publication in priority. Those authors who are not members of IAELC are encouraged to apply for membership of the association before their submissions. All submissions must include a cover letter that includes the author’s full mailing address, email address, telephone numbers, and professional or academic affiliation. The cover letter should indicate that the manuscript contains original content, has not previously been published, and is not under review by another publication. Submissions or subscription should be addressed to: isl2017@163.com.

Contact information: Editorial office, *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature*, 6 East Building, Zijingang Campus, Zhejiang University, 866 Yuhangtang Rd, Hangzhou 310058, P.R. China. Tel:+86-571-8898-2010

Copyright ©2017 by *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature*. All rights reserved. No copy shall be made without the permission of the publisher.

Advisory Board

Massimo Bacigalupo / Università di Genova, ITA

Michael Bell / University of Warwick, UK

Charles Bernstein / University of Pennsylvania, USA

Vladimir Biti / University of Vienna, AT

Marshall Brown / University of Washington, USA

Wu Di / Zhejiang University, CHN

Stefan Collini / University of Cambridge, UK

Khairy Douma / Cairo University, EGY

Luo Lianggong / Central China Normal University, CHN

Byeongho Jung / Korea University, KOR

Anne-Marie Mai / University of Southern Denmark, DEN

John Rathmell / University of Cambridge, UK

Claude Rawson / Yale University, USA

Wang Yong / Zhejiang University, CHN

Joshua Scodel / University of Chicago, USA

Shang Biwu / Shanghai Jiaotong University, CHN

Igor Shaytanov / Problems of Literature, RUS

Inseop Shin / Konkuk University, KOR

Su Hui / Central China Normal University, CHN

Galin Tihanov / Queen Mary University of London, UK

Wang Songlin / Ningbo University, CHN

Zhang Xin / Guangdong University of Foreign Studies, CHN

Contents

Thematic Studies on Xu Jun's Academic Contribution

- 393-418 Xu Jun: His Role and Contribution in Chinese Translation Studies
Tan Zaixi
- 419-433 Firm Practical Presence and Determined Theoretical Explorer: Practice and Research in Xu Jun's Translation Criticism
Liu Yunhong
- 434-447 Cultural Communication and Civilization Exchange: Xu Jun's Cultural View on Translation
Lan Hongjun
- 448-461 On Inheritance and Development of Tradition: Xu Jun's Literary Translation Studies
Song Xuezhi
- 462-473 Literary Translation, Literary Research and Intercultural Exchange: Xu Jun and the Poetic Adventures of Le Clézio in China
Yuan Xiaoyi
- 474-485 Tracing the Path of Translation: Xu Jun's Journey in Translation and Translation Studies
Xu Fang
Xu Jun
- 486-496 The Common Culture as a Way out of Cultural Crises: *The Idea of Culture* Revisited
Yin Qiping
- 497-509 The Completion of *The Compilation and Interpretation of The Zuo Commentary* by Sokken Yasui and Its Hermeneutic Characteristics
Chen Yanhui

- 510-522 Marginalized Subjective, Counterfactual Narrative, and Multiple Temporal Shapes: An Interpretation of Postmodern Historical Metafiction from the Perspective of Literariness
Zhang Su
Liu Can
- 523-531 Jude's Ethical Choice and Identity Construction in *Jude the Obscure*
Ai Shiwei
- 532-540 The "Transformation" of Ethical Cognition in a Chaotic World: An Analysis of Ryunosuke Akutagawa's "Rashomon"
Huo Fei
- 541-553 Rethinking Ethical Identity in the Age of Artificial Intelligence
Ren Jie
- 554-568 AI Turn in Ethical Literary Criticism
Lyu Hongbo
Fang Wenkai
- 569-582 The Self Shrouded in Fog: The Layers of My Ethics in the Novel *A Trip to Moojin* and the Movie *Decision To Leave*
Jin Sunghee
- 583-589 What is World Literature: *Tracing the Origins of "World Literature"* and Reflections on World Literature Studies
Liu Ge
Li Yun

目 录

许钧学术思想研究专栏

- 393-418 许钧的翻译探索与译学贡献
谭载喜
- 419-433 坚定的实践在场者与执着的理论探索者：许钧的翻译批评实践和研究
刘云虹
- 434-447 文化交流与文明互鉴：许钧的翻译文化观
蓝红军
- 448-461 传统的继承与发扬——许钧的文学翻译研究
宋学智
- 462-473 文学译介、文学研究与跨文化交流：许钧与勒克莱齐奥在中国的诗意历险
袁筱一
- 474-485 译道寻踪：许钧的翻译与翻译研究之路
许 方
许 钧
- 486-496 共同文化：走出文化危机的必由之路——重读《文化观念》
殷企平
- 497-509 安井息轩《左传辑释》的成书及其阐释特征
陈彦辉
- 510-522 主体虚化、反事实叙事与多重时间塑型：后现代历史元小说的“文学性”解读
张 谡
刘 灿

523-531 《无名的裘德》中裘德的伦理选择与身份建构

艾士薇

532-540 混沌世界中伦理认知的“变革”：解读芥川龙之介的《罗生门》

霍 斐

541-553 人工智能时代伦理身份再思考

任 洁

554-568 文学伦理学批评的人工智能转向

吕洪波

方文开

569-582 雾中的“我”：论小说《雾津纪行》和电影《分手的决心》中“我”
的伦理层级

陈性希

583-589 什么是世界文学：《“世界文学”推原》与世界文学研究反思

刘 舸

李 云

Xu Jun: His Role and Contribution in Chinese Translation Studies

Tan Zaixi

Abstract: Xu Jun is one of the most outstanding scholars in the Chinese TS research field. His translational and academic achievements are multi-dimensional. This paper studies this multi-dimensionality of the major contributions that Xu has made to contemporary translation studies in China, in his role as a prolific translator of French literature, and a productive translation critic and theorist. By examining his trajectory of integrating first-hand experience as a translation practitioner with his deep understanding of translation as a theorist, it is possible to see in Xu and his TS contributions a very fitting example of how, with gift, capability, academic upbringing and diligence, good translation practitioners can be innovative translation theorists at the same time, and *vice versa*.

Keywords: Xu Jun; translating; French literature; translation studies; outstanding contribution; China

Author: Tan Zaixi is Emeritus Professor of Hong Kong Baptist University (Hong Kong 999077, China), and was Distinguished Professor of Shenzhen University (Shenzhen 518060, China) and Chair Professor of Beijing Foreign Studies University (Beijing 100081, China). His research interests focus on theories and philosophies of translation, the historiography of translation, and the politics of translation (Email: thtan@associate.hkbu.edu.hk).

标题: 许钧的翻译探索与译学贡献

内容摘要: 许钧是中国翻译研究领域最杰出的学者之一，他的翻译实践和理论成果是多方面的。本文就其作为法国文学丰产译家、多产译评家和译论家对当代中国译学所做的众多贡献展开研究。通过考察其将翻译实践与译论研究紧密结合的行迹，我们不难发现，在翻译的实践和理论研究中，人们除了依靠天赋才能，更通过文学和学术素养及勤奋努力的加持，即能做到兼容实践者和理论者之长，成为优秀翻译实践和理论特质兼蓄的人才。在这一点上，许钧及其在翻译实践和理论上所展现的重要贡献，无疑构成了十分具有说服力的榜样。

关键词: 许钧；翻译实践；法国文学；译论研究；杰出贡献；中国

作者简介: 谭载喜，中国香港浸会大学荣休教授，曾任深圳大学特聘教授、北

京外国语大学讲席教授，主要研究方向为翻译哲学和理论、翻译史学研究和翻译政治学。

Introduction

To people in the Chinese translation studies (TS) field, Xu Jun is such a big and familiar name that it does not need any introduction. Yet when it comes to how one writes about the development of TS research in China since the country's opening up to the world in the late 1970s and early 1980s, it is definitely one of those names which one cannot afford not to constantly keep directing one's attention to. It is perhaps not inappropriate to say that the unprecedented progress in the study of translation in China over the past 40 years and more is heavily due to the innovative and productive undertakings by the increasingly large number of TS-minded scholars in the country, including Xu as one of those at the forefront.

My first meeting with Xu was at a major national conference on literary translation convened in the summer of 1985, at the scenic seaside town of Yantai. That conference was reportedly the first of its kind in China after the Cultural Revolution (1966-1976) and participation was strictly by invitation based on professional seniority. At a time when older age was given priority in social and academic life, it was certainly quite an honour for the very small number of four to five "young people" (me and Xu included), from among "the younger generation of Chinese scholars" across the country, to have had their papers accepted for presentation at the conference. In retrospect, this successful early experience in Yantai became but a marker of the beginning of a rich and eventful academic career yet to come for both Xu and myself. The second time we met was also at a conference, one that was named the First National Conference on Translation Theory and one that was to be regarded many years afterwards as "having constituted a most important milestone for the development of modern translation theory in China" (Tan, "Translation Studies in China: Retrospection, Prospection and Reflection" 7). It took place in 1987 in Qingdao, another beautiful seaside city, near Yantai, where Xu and I, still in our status as "young scholars," both spoke at the conference and took an active part in all the conference's major discussion sessions. Thereafter, we met again on many other occasions, one of which was during his invited visit to Hong Kong in September 2005 for him to receive an Honorary Fellowship of the Hong Kong Translation Society in his capacity as a distinguished professor from Nanjing University whilst I was then undertaking my new professorial duties at Hong Kong Baptist University. I was among the audiences

attending his “Recipient Address” at the Hong Kong Translation Society Honorary Fellowship Award Ceremony held on the campus of the University of Hong Kong, China. It was an inspiring speech in which Xu shared his first-hand experience as a translator and a translation researcher. Not only was I deeply impressed by the remarkable achievements he had made in the field, especially since I last saw him prior to my leaving Shenzhen University in 1996 for a Research Fellow position at the City University of Hong Kong, but I was also greatly appreciative of his unique views on literary translation and translation studies, including his ideas on “cultivating and maintaining cultural diversity in translation and, through translation, a symbiotic relationship in development between Chinese and foreign cultures;” on “integrating translation theory with practice;” and, in particular, on “the training of new generations of translators and interpreters at the university level.”

Of course, the role that Xu has played and the contribution he has made in Chinese academia are not merely confined to his translational and scholarly achievements, but they are also seen in the many administrative duties he has assumed during the various stages of his academic life, such as serving as Deputy Dean of the Graduate School of Nanjing University for many years, and in the valuable services he has rendered to teaching and education in translation for which he was awarded many honours including, among others, being recipient of the French Government-awarded *Order of Academic Palms* (*officier dans l'Ordre des Palmes Académiques*, 1999) and the Chinese Ministry of Education-awarded title of Outstanding Supervisor of Doctoral Theses (2010). However, it is Xu the translator and scholar, not Xu the administrator or service contributor, that I am primarily concerned with here in this article. So in what comes below I will mainly discuss how I see the translator-scholar side of Xu, with specific regard to his role and contribution in the field of Chinese TS research.

I. Researching Translation Both as a Translation Practitioner and a Theorist

As early back as in the 15th century, while discussing what may constitute “the correct way to translate” (*de interpretaione recta*), the famous Italian scholar Leonardo Bruni (1369-1444) commented on the distinction between a knowledge of language (and by extension, a knowledge or theory of translation—*my interpretation*) and the capacity to exercise it, by saying that “[m]any persons, for instance, appreciate painting who cannot themselves paint, and many understand the art of music without themselves being able to sing” (Bruni 57). In very much the same vein, the famous contemporary Chinese translator Fu Lei (1908-1966) emphasised the difference between the theory and the practice of translation. He

said, “Translation is a practice-oriented activity [...] Just as literary theorists are not likely to have the same capacity to write as poets or novelists, so is it the case with translation. I have seen people who talk so eloquently and persuasively about their theory of translation, and yet what they produce in the practice of translation seems nowhere at all near being good, which is indeed what I have often tended to warn myself against doing” (Fu 625)¹.

Apparently, the position that Bruni and Fu seem to be advocating is something that one would probably not disagree with. After all, it is true that the knowledge or understanding of an activity such as translation (i.e., the theoretical respect of the activity) cannot be the same as the ability to do it (i.e., the practical side of the activity). This, in fact, can be said of all other human activities including, for instance, knowing and speaking about a language and the actual speaking of the language; or the knowing and speaking about the mechanism of swimming or of driving a vehicle, and the ability to actually swim or to actually drive the vehicle. However, what one may not be so sure about is whether there exists any inevitable or unsurmountable barrier to prevent good theorists from becoming good practitioners, or *vice versa*. In fact, if we look through the history of translation, both in China and in the West, we would be able to find innumerable cases where those who spoke so “eloquently” and “persuasively” about translation were also those who performed the actual task of translation so “excellently.” Examples that readily come to mind include such historical figures as Yan Fu (1854-1921) and Lu Xun (1881-1936) in China; and John Dryden (1631-1700), Johann W. von Goethe (1749-1832), Paul Valéry (1871-1945), and Benedetto Croce (1866-1952) in the West.

In other words, in the field of translation (in fact, the same is true of activities in other fields as well), there is indeed nothing to prevent one and the same person from accomplishing themselves both as a theorist and a practitioner at the same time. Not only have the above-cited historical examples shown this, but what I have in mind as an on-going living example can also convincingly prove this to be true.

As remarked at the opening of this article, people in the Chinese TS research field would very well know that Xu Jun is a theorist of translation, but what they may not know about is that Xu actually embarked on his academic career at university by first distinguishing himself as a translator, and then by his combined role as

1 My translation from the Chinese original: “翻译重在实践 (……) 文艺理论家不大能兼作诗人或小说家, 翻译工作也不例外; 曾经见过一些人写翻译理论, 头头是道, 非常中肯, 译的东西却不高明得很, 我常引以为戒。” Note also that the English translation of all other quotes in the article is my work as well, unless otherwise specified.

a translation teacher, researcher and practitioner. He received his undergraduate education in French language and literature in the 1970s at the Nanjing College of Foreign Languages (NCFL) and undertook a postgraduate degree in translation studies in the 1980s at Nanjing University. In 1976, one year after he began to work as an assistant lecturer at NCFL, he was sent by the school to pursue a language and literature programme in French at the University of Bretagne, France. An avid reader and enthusiast of French literature, Xu was deeply attracted to the great works of such literary giants as Voltaire, Hugo, Balzac and Sartre, and also to writers of the New Novel (*Nouveau Roman*). The goal he set for himself was, of course, not just to learn about those great men of letters in the French literary tradition. Having fallen deep in love, so to speak, with his “beloved” French literature, he had the urge and passion to introduce her to his compatriots back at home in China so they would be able to also see and feel her charm like himself.¹ Thus he started to earnestly search for works with which to fulfil his long-term ambition to be a translator. Despite a couple of unsuccessful initial attempts to find a fitting starter text, he eventually hit on the novel *Désert* by Jean-Marie Gustave Le Clézio (1940-), which he immediately undertook to co-translate into Chinese in 1982. Then subsequently in 1991 he single-handedly rendered *The Interrogation* (*Le Procès-verbal*), another novel by Le Clézio, who was yet to be the recipient of the Nobel Prize for Literature in 2008. The great merit displayed in the works of Le Clézio and the acclaim given to the author, for example, by having the French Academy awarding him in 1980 the newly created Grand Prix Paul Morand for his *Désert* and especially by his becoming a subsequent winner of the 2008 Nobel Prize for Literature, definitely served as a forever-increasing stimulus to Xu’s translational endeavours. Since his publication of the Chinese version of *Désert* as co-translator in the early 1980s, Xu has authored or co-authored up to a total of some 30 translations, the more notable ones including, in addition to those of *Désert* and *The Interrogation* by Le Clézio mentioned above, his translations of Lucien Bodard’s *Anne-Marie* (1985), Elsa Triolet’s *Luna Park* (*Luna-Park*, 1988), Marcel Proust’s *In Search of Lost Time* (*À la Recherche du Temps Perdu* Vol. 4, 1990), Honoré de Balzac’s *Cousin Pons* (*Le Cousin Pons*, 1995) and *Cousin Bette* (*La Cousine Bette*, 1999), Simone de Beauvoir’s *The Mandarins* (*Les Mandarins*, 2000), Milan Kundera’s *The Unbearable Lightness of Being* (*L’Insoutenable Légèreté de l’être/Nesnesitelná lehkost bytí*, 2003) and *Ignorance* (*La Ignorancia*, 2004), and Victor Hugo’s *Toilers of the Sea* (*Les Travailleurs de la Mer*, 2005). No doubt, the publication of so many important translations by any one

1 See Xu Jun, “From Soldier to Professor: An Interview with Xu Jun,” May 2015. Available at: <https://www.translators.com.cn/archives/2012/05/4790>. Accessed 20 Nov. 2023.

translator would have been no small achievement even if they had been the products of a full-time professional translator, let alone by someone who has had a full teaching load to fulfil every semester of the year.

Needless to say, my purpose of citing the above facts does not simply lie in making a reference to Xu as an accomplished translator *per se*. The fact that, side by side with the long list of translations that he has published, there is an equally, if not more highly, impressive list of his very large number of published research outcomes, is surely a fitting on-going example with which to prove my argument that no inherent barrier exists there to prevent creative theorists of translation from becoming capable translation practitioners, or *vice versa*, to prevent accomplished translators from becoming insightful translation theorists.

The long list of publications authored/co-authored or edited/co-edited by Xu the translation and literary theorist covers a wide range of topics on literary translation, translation criticism and translation theory. These topics may be broadly grouped into three different yet mutually intrinsically-related categories, i.e.: (i) those on French literature, its translation into Chinese, and literary criticism; (ii) those on the research area of French scholarship about translation; (iii) those on the theory of translation in general terms. As the three categories of writings each involve a considerable span of research work that Xu has undertaken, it would not be doing justice to him to fill everything into any one section. It would, therefore, be more appropriate to spread out the discussion of these categories separately, each under a different heading of its own.

II. Critiquing French Literature and Translation

The first category of Xu's research writings involves his expertise as a versed translator and a French literature specialist, both in terms of his general understanding of the French literary world and in terms of his close personal connection with Le Clézio, the 2008 Nobel laureate. Some of his more representative published titles include:

1) Books: *The Translation and Reception of French Literature in China in the 20th Century*, *On Fu Lei's Translations*, and *Language, Literature and Culture: A Study of the Chinese Versions of The Red and the Black*.

2) Articles: "Translating Is a Happy Act of Encountering in History: My Story of Translating French Literature," "Literary Translation, Cultural Exchange and Academic Interaction: With Special Reference to My Engagement with Le Clézio," "Poetic Temptation and Generation: The Poetic Adventure of Le Clézio," "On the Role of Memory in Le Clézio's Novels: A Case Study of *Le Chercheur D'or*,"

and “On Exchanges and Emulations between Chinese and Foreign Cultures: The Interactions between [Nobel Laureates] Mo Yan and Le Clézio,” etc.

Reflections of Xu’s general understanding of French literature typically consist in the three book projects cited in the above list, i.e., *The Translation and Reception of French Literature in China in the 20th Century* (Expanded Edition) and *On Fu Lei’s Translations*, which are monographs both published under Xu’s name as first author; and *Language, Literature and Culture: A Study of the Translated Versions into Chinese of The Red and the Black* (Expanded Edition), which is a collection of essays with Xu being the editor.

As we know, the translation history of French literature in China, strictly speaking, started with Lin Shu and Wang Shouchang’s translation in 1898 of Alexandre Dumas fils’ novel *The Lady of the Camellias* (*La Dame aux Camélias*), followed in 1900 by the first Chinese woman translator Xue Shaohui and her husband Chen Shaopeng’s translation of Jules Verne’s *Around the World in Eighty Days* (*Le Tour du Monde en Quatre-vingts Jours*). Though this history does not seem very long, it is nevertheless true that “French literature translators and researchers in China have played an extremely important role in the country’s overall introduction of foreign literature and in the advancement of cultural exchanges between China and foreign countries” (Xu and Song 1). Divided into two parts, comprising 4 chapters for Part I and 11 for Part II, *The Translation and Reception of French Literature in China in the 20th Century* offers a comprehensive discussion of how French literature has travelled in China in the 20th century and since, from the perspective of the “ethos and ideological trends” in literary creations as displayed in the French originals (Part I) and the perspective of the “major French authors and works” that have been translated into Chinese, and how these translations have gradually and persistently influenced the development of Chinese literature (Part II). As carefully analysed and with a critical eye in the monograph, the French impact on modern and contemporary Chinese literature has mainly come from such literary trends as the French brand of Surrealism, Existentialism, New Novel, and Theatre of the Absurd (*Théâtre de L’absurde*), involving the translation of French masterpieces by Anatole France (1844-1924), Romain Rolland (1866-1944), André Gide (1869-1951), Marcel Proust (1871-1922), Marguerite Duras (1914-1996), Roland Barthes (1915-1980), Le Clézio and so on. It is owing to the unremitting efforts of such translators and translator-cum-literary critics as Fu Lei, Sheng Denghua (1912-1970), Luo Dagang (1909-1998), Liu Mingjiu (1934-2022) and Guo Hongan (1943-2023) in 20th century China that those French authors and their works became well known to the Chinese reading public, and that they still much remain on the Chinese-

language must-read list of French novels, poetry and drama today. On the other hand, elements of the French influence seem to have also found their way into the original writings by native Chinese authors in the modern and contemporary period such as Dai Shuwang (1905-1950), Lu Ling (1923-1994), Wang Xiaobo (1952-1997) and Yu Hua (1960-). In unequivocal terms, the writings by these and other Chinese authors often bear characteristics of the surrealist, existentialist, new novelist or absurdist approaches attributable to the French tradition of literature.

In a like manner but from a different perspective, *On Fu Lei's Translations*, authored jointly by Xu Jun, Song Xuezhi and Hu Anjiang and published in 2016, is an in-depth case study of Fu Lei, the undisputedly most celebrated translator of French literature that China has ever seen in the 20th century, best noted for his translations of Honore de Balzac, Romain Rolland and Voltaire. Many of Fu's translations have become as classical masterpieces in themselves in Chinese as their original source texts in French. For example, his Chinese versions of Balzac's *Eugénie Grandet* (1949), *Le Père Goriot* (1950), *La Cousine Bette* (1951), *Le Cousin Pons* (1952), *La Rabouilleuse* (*The Black Sheep*, 1962), and *The Human Comedy* (*Comédie Humaine*) series (published in various volumes posthumously in 1986, 1988 and 1989), Rolland's *Jean-Christophe* (1937), *The Life of Michel Angelo* (*Vie de Michel-Ange*, 1954) and *The Life of Tolstoy* (*Vie de Tolstoi*, 1954), and Voltaire's *Candide* (1955) and *Selective Novels* (published posthumously in 1980) have frequently served as role-model texts for what is "good" translation for general Chinese readers, and in particular for students of translation and translation studies in the Chinese classroom. However, for such a translation master as Fu, who was also such a great literary critic and translation scholar, there has not been adequate research attention directed at him, especially in terms of him being the translation and literary theorist. Public concern may have been with the masterly quality of Fu's translations, but no systematic efforts have been made in studying what he may have had in mind about how he should translate the way he did, and why so he did it. In other words, people may want to know: What is the cultural politics of Fu's translation practice? What are the underlying principles of his translations? What is his translational poetics? How is his translation practice correlated with his ethos for translation? What criteria did he use for choosing which particular authors or texts to translate, or not to translate? and why so? etc.

Much to our delight, Xu's co-authored volume *On Fu Lei's Translations* has provided answers to all these possible questions. Consisting of 9 chapters each addressing a separate issue on Fu, the project is undoubtedly a systematic first research attempt at Fu the theorist. It has made tightly-knit analyses and discussions

of the uniqueness of Fu's scholarship, involving his humanistic worldview underpinning his practice (Ch. 1); his reader-centred poetics of translation (Ch. 2); his translational stylistics over the idiomaticity of language use and his preference of TT-ST "resemblance in spirit" to "resemblance in form" (Ch. 3); his decision to partake in translation as a life-long career, his choices of particular texts to translate and his exercising of a particular style for a particular translation (Ch. 4); how his vision of translation is influenced or affected by his views on literary criticism, and on fine arts and music about which he was also superbly knowledgeable (Ch. 5); how he deals with the relations between translator and reader and reading space, exemplified by the chapter's five separate case studies of his most representative translations of Balzac, Rolland and Voltaire (Ch. 6); the role of paratexts in his translations such as his dedications, forewords, afterwords, footnotes, endnotes and other materials such as "family letters" or "correspondences with friends" which may relate in one way or another to his translations (Ch. 7); and the implications and lasting influences in China of his translations, and his translational and literary scholarship (Ch. 8 and 9). Clearly, all these analyses and discussions in this book project serve as a great enhancement of our existing knowledge and understanding of Fu, and through the case of Fu, there will surely come an enhanced understanding and appreciation of the dynamics of translating French literature and that of foreign literatures in China in general.

With regard to literary and translation criticism activities in China, Xu's edited collection of critical essays on various Chinese translations of the French novel *The Red and the Black* (*Le Rouge et le Noir*) by Stendhal (penname for Henri Beyle, 1783-1842) could perhaps be regarded as one of the most highly acclaimed works of literary and translation criticism over the past 30 or so years. Comprising two main parts plus an appendix, *Language, Literature and Culture: A Study of the Chinese Versions of The Red and the Black* (Expanded Edition) offers a wide span of discussions by Chinese translators and scholars across the board on how best Stendhal should be reproduced in the Chinese language. Part I, named "General Discussions" (讨论), contains general essays, dialogues and correspondences between translators and peers about their opinion on translational issues surrounding the author and the source text, and discussions of a questionnaire survey on reader reaction to chosen target texts. Part II, that on "Specialised Discussions" (专论), contains more focused, case studies on the interpretation and representation of the French novel in the context of the Chinese language and culture, and a changed, Chinese language readership. The appendix, in spite of its seemingly supplementary nature, nonetheless contains essays by important translators and literary scholars on relevant issues, such as the comparison of Chinese translators' interest in

The Red and the Black to Western sinologists' interest in the Chinese classical novel of *The Dream of the Red Chamber*, both of which, quite interestingly, comprise the word "Red" in their names. The general position that Xu takes, in his role as both editor of the collection and critic on *The Red and the Black* in translation, is made clear early back in his 1996 paper entitled "Language, Literature and Culture: On 'Literal/Linguistic Translation' and 'Literary Translation'," whose first half of the title was to also become the first part of the name of his subsequently published book under discussion here. Based on his contrastive analysis of examples culled from five different Chinese versions of *The Red and the Black*, Xu concludes that the ideal type of translation of Stendhal "should approximate the original as closely as possible in its language-cultural settings; that it should handle the relation well between acts of 'sinicization' and acts of 'europeanization' in the language use for the target text; and that it should not cut apart language, literature and culture one from the other and randomly overstep the limits of 'recreation'" (Xu, "Language, Literature and Culture" 168).

In summarised form, the most important and recurrent issues covered by the collection, especially in its two main parts, involve such age-old questions on literary translation (the translation of *The Red and the Black* included) as whether translators should adopt literal or non-literal methods; whether they should seek after translational resemblance in form or resemblance in spirit; whether they should be absolutely faithful to the author or they should have the freedom to create/recreate in their own right; whether translation should be treated as an art or as a science; or whether a translation should function as a borrowing from the original or it should be a surpassing of it. Interestingly, it must be noted here that all the discussions culminating in both the first, 1996 edition and the expanded, 2011 edition of the book have come to be known as the "Big Debate" on translating *The Red and the Black* in Chinese literary criticism in the current era.

In his commentary on the main features of the book, Bai Liping points out that although the participants in the debate have displayed "different opinions on various issues, such as translation criteria, the style of translation, literal and free translation, etc., all of them are from a source text-oriented approach with a similar purpose, i.e., to achieve 'faithfulness' in translation" (Bai 325). So, like what Zhao Xifang has had to say, this seems to reflect a fact that "research in the field of translation studies in China is 'backward' because no final outcome has ever been achieved as a result of the debates on the issues of literal and free translation in the Chinese history of translation, and it is already outdated to consider the original as being central within the field of translation studies in the West" (Zhao 235-236; tr. qtd from Bai 325). But nonetheless, as Bai contends, such issues as involved in the debate "are still worth

further discussion and that some unresolved historical controversies should not be overlooked,” and that “the essays in the book may also offer valuable inspiration and insights in relation to the study of Chinese readers of translated fiction[...].” (Bai 326).

Meanwhile, the importance and impact of the collection have been even more succinctly summarised by Fang Ping’s review article entitled “History Will Give It Full Credit” (Fang 28). Commenting very positively on the diligent work that Xu Jun has put into the compilation of the volume, Fang remarked that the collection constitutes “a work of historic significance...so much as that when we look back one day at how we have moved along the road of literary translation over these past decades, we will be able to identify many of the traces left behind by history. It is also my firm belief that, with such profound significance and impact, the book will surely gain further credit in the future history of the translation of literature in China” (Fang 31).

In contrast with discussions contained in the above books, Xu’s paper publications in his capacity as translator and literary specialist are characterised by a twofold presentation of his views and theoretical reflections. Firstly, there are papers based on some of his public lectures at universities and academic interviews, where he shares his points of view with his audiences on such issues as what it is that he sees in translation, what it is that he translates, why it is important to translate, and so on. The most representative in this respect is the first item listed in the above cluster of his selective papers, i.e., “Translating Is a Happy Act of Encountering in History: My Story of Translating French Literature.” In that article, he tells how he has translated and, most interestingly of all, how he has grown from a French language enthusiast in his early days as a college student, to an ardent and productive translator of French literature, and further to how he has effectively integrated his role as a translation practitioner and that as a translation researcher.¹ Surely, this last point is of particular relevance to students who plan to specialise in translation and foreign languages, and to embark on a career path in the academia like Xu.

Secondly, there are papers that go beyond his personal experience and growth story as a translator, to specific research topics on Le Clézio, with whom he has maintained close contact both as one of his Chinese translators and as a personal friend. Standing out most conspicuously in this connection are two essays from among the above list, i.e., “Literary Translation, Cultural Exchange and Academic

1 See Xu Jun, “Translating Is a Happy Act of Encountering in History: My Story of Translating French Literature,” *Foreign Languages* 2 (2017): 97-105.

Interaction: With Special Reference to My Engagement with Le Clézio” and “Poetic Temptation and Generation: The Poetic Adventure of Le Clézio.” The former essay is based on a lecture delivered at Beijing University, in which he adeptly used examples of how he translated Le Clézio and how he has drawn insights from his over thirty years of contact with the Nobel laureate, in elaborating on the essence of literary translation, and on how translators and academics in the humanities can better develop themselves through the practice of translation, active participation in language and cultural exchange activities, and informed skills training in academic research. By contrast, the latter article, i.e., that of “Poetic Temptation and Generation: The Poetic Adventure of Le Clézio,” probes into the poetic adventure of the Nobel laureate in his writing of novels. It examines how Le Clézio’s descriptions and narrations range “from the relationship between language and existence, to poetic expressions and generation, with his view of literature as being life generation in a dynamic continuation” (Xu, “Poetic Temptation and Generation” 12). By offering in-depth discussions of major points of concern, the article has succeeded in helping Chinese readers of Le Clézio gain a clear understanding of the poeticality and musicality of his works, with regard to their rhythms and colours in language expression, the romanticism in both his thoughts and texts, as well as the resonance of his thoughts and texts with nature.

III. Sinicizing French Translation Scholarship for a Chinese Audience

The second category of Xu’s researches involve his endeavours to introduce French scholarship about translation for the benefit of non-French language researchers on the Chinese arena. Three types of work are published in this connection. The first is straightforward translation of contemporary French thinking about translation. Three works were produced in Xu’s early stage as an academic, in the form of a selective translation of parts of *Theoretical Problems on Translation* (*Les Problèmes Théoriques de la Traduction*) by Georges Mounin (1910-1993). Published as journal pieces in *Language and Translation*, i.e., in Issues 1, 3 and 4 respectively of the 1991 volume of the journal, and under the separate titles of “On Translation and Cultural Diversity,” “Translation and ‘World Mapping’ Theory” and “Translation and ‘World Mapping’ Theory (continued),” these three translated texts are among some of the early efforts in China to acquaint Chinese readers with Mounin’s linguistically-oriented approach to translation, with special regard to his focus on linguistic diversity and the crossing of cultural “barriers” through translation. As a result, in addition to what Chinese TS researchers already knew about non-Chinese (mainly Western European and Russian), contemporary ideas on translation, such as

Andrei Fedorov's (1906-1997) "Principles of Translational Equivalence" (Pan 58-61; Tan, *A Short History of Translation in the West* 285-290), Eugene Nida's (1914-2011) "Science of Translating," "Dynamic Equivalence" and "Reader Reaction" (Tan, "Introducing Eugene Nida's *Towards a Science of Translating*"; "Nida on the Nature of Translation"; "Nida and His Translation Theory"; *A Short History of Translation in the West* 271-283; Tan and Nida, "Approaches to Translation"), Peter Newmark's (1916-2011) "Semantic vs. Communicative Translation" (Wang 11; Tan, *A Short History of Translation in the West* 258-263), John Catford's (1917-2009) "Linguistic Theory of Translation" (Bao 68; Mu 1; Tan, *A Short History of Translation in the West* 249-256), Leonid Barkhudarov's (1923-1985) "Linguistic Solutions to Translation Problems" (Cai 11; Barkhudarov 1; Tan, *A Short History of Translation in the West* 290-298), and George Steiner's (1929-2020) "Hermeneutic Motion of Translation" (Zhuang, "Introducing George Steiner's *After Babel*" 45; *Studies on Literary Translation Theory: George Steiner's After Babel* 1; Tan, *A Short History of Translation in the West* 263-267), they now had the opportunity to read in Chinese how Mounin, as one of the most important contemporary French translation scholars, has had to offer on translation theory.

This initial effort of translating Mounin then leads on to the second type of Xu's involvement in disseminating French theory of translation in China, for example, by sharing his theoretical reflections on French points of view on translation matters. Among the more noticeable are the thoughts he expressed in one of his many published interviews. Entitled "The Experience of the Foreign: An Interview on Translation Ethics," the interview, conducted in 2016 by young Chinese scholar Liu Yunhong, chiefly involves how Xu views the issue of "ethics of translation," especially in relation to what Antoine Berman (1942-1991) has stipulated in his seminal work *The Experience of the Foreign: Culture and Translation in Romantic Germany* (*L'Épreuve de l'étranger: Culture et traduction dans l'Allemagne romantique*).

Broadly speaking, Xu is in full agreement with Berman's view on the ethics of translation, as Berman maintains that though the translator performs his translational task as a "writer," he is but a "re-writer," though he is an "author," he is never "The Author;" though the translated work is a "work," it is never "The Work" (Berman 5-6). In other words, the basic ethical behaviour of translators that Berman advocates is that they should show respect to the "foreign/strange" or to what is "different" in the ST that they are translating. Indeed, as Xu sees it, "the necessity of translation lies in the differences existing between languages and cultures," and the fundamental goal of translation "is to break the cultural barriers blocking mutual understanding and integration of different cultures. Therefore, many important issues

involved in translation are ethical in essence, namely about how to interpret and deal with the relationship between self and the other” (Liu and Xu 71)¹. Logically, in spite of the notion of ‘fidelity’ “constantly being questioned and deconstructed” in the field, one cannot really do without striving to retain and communicate the in-built “heterogeneity” of the ST in the translation process because such “retention and communication” must surely be a “requirement of translation ethics,” and even a “pre-requisite” for interlingual and intercultural communication in the first place.

Important as Xu’s reflections and his prior translations of Mounin may be, they are but two separate examples of how Xu has tried to introduce to the Chinese TS research field contemporary French thinking about translation. However, Xu’s most important contribution to the Sinicization of French translational scholarship comes from his third type of work on the subject, i.e., the overall research endeavour that he has made in co-authoring and publishing the book *Contemporary French Translation Theory*. The volume was first produced in 1998 on a textbook grant from Nanjing University, published by the Nanjing University Press. Two years later, with permission from the Nanjing University Press and as an effort to support disciplinary development, a revised edition was published by the Wuhan-based Hubei Education Press. In 2003, the book won recommendation from the Postgraduate Education Office of the Chinese Ministry of Education for it to be used as a Coursebook for TS Postgraduate Students, which led to the publication of a new edition, again by the Hubei Education Press. The latest, substantially expanded fourth edition was released in November 2023, by the Yilin Press in Nanjing. Needless to say, such a successful trajectory of publication of the book over the past 24 years is a clear indicator of its firm impact, and it is largely to the credit of the publication of this volume, though, of course, not excluding other efforts or efforts by other scholars as well, that the contemporary French school of translation theory has been travelling quite successfully in the Chinese field of translation studies.

Composed of 11 chapters plus an Introduction, *Contemporary French Translation Theory (Expanded Edition)* provides Chinese readers with a comprehensive picture of the development of contemporary French translation scholarship. Its Introduction, written by Xu as lead author and editor of the book, is an overview of how TS research has evolved over the years, especially since the early 1960s when Georges Mounin first published his *Les problèmes théoriques de la traduction* (1963). Chapters 1 and 11, and part of Chapter 4, which are also under Xu’s authorship, discusses the topics respectively of Mounin’s unique contribution to the development of French translation theory in the new era (Ch. 1), of Henri Meschonnic’s (1932-2009) position

1 These lines are a direct quote from the English abstract of the article.

on the poetics of translation as presented in his *Pour le poétique, Épistémologie de l'écriture, Poétique de la traduction* (Ch. 4), and of Xu's own reflections on the French tradition of translation theory and the historic insights that can be drawn from the study of French translation theory and from that of Western translation theory at large (Ch. 11). Highly interesting and informative also are the discussions by the other six authors of Xu's writing team who are each responsible for their own topics, including those on Jean-René Ladmiral's three-stage development of his *traductologie* (translatology) from *traductographie* (translatography) to *traductologie* and further to *traductosophie* (translato-philosophy) (Ladmiral 1994; Ch. 2); French-speaking Canadian scholar Robert Larose's, and French-speaking Spanish scholar Amparo Hurtado Albir's adherence to the old concern of "fidelity"/"faithfulness" in translation (Larose 1989; Hurtado Albir 1990; Ch. 3); Yves Bonnefoy's (1923-2016) theory of poetic translation of (Bonnefoy 1981, 2000; Ch. 5); Danica Seleskovitch (1921-2001) and Marianne Lederer's interpretive translation theory (Seleskovitch and Lederer 1984; Ch. 6); the teaching theories of translation proposed and practised respectively by Élisabeth Lavault (1987), Michel Ballard (1984, 1993) and Karla Dejean le Féal (1993) (Ch. 7); the sociolinguistic approaches to translation advocated by Maurice Pergnier (1978), Jean-Marc Gouanvic (1999) and Jean Peeters (1999) (Ch. 8); the cultural studies approaches to translation represented by Antoine Berman (1984; Ch. 9); and the various constructive or interventional perspectives at translation criticism in Berman (1995) and in Meschonnic (1973; Ch. 10).

All this Sinicized information and discussion provided in *Contemporary French Translation Theory*, especially in its *Expanded Edition*, serves as a great enhancement of its Chinese audience's existing knowledge and understanding of TS developments in France. As has always been a major performer on the Western stage of translation and translation studies, the French school of translation and translation thinking carries many distinctive features of development, which in the contemporary times, according to Xu¹, are characterised by the following:

1) Researchers in the French domain of translation theory do not seem to rush at any basic framework for developing translation studies. Their research methodology does not seem to lie in the ambition to design what can be called a systematic theoretical model, but rather, it lies in their probing into the field of translation studies step by step, by starting from the basic problems of translation and by exploring issues from various perspectives.

2) A second characteristic feature of French TS research is its emphasis on the

1 See Xu Jun, ed, *Contemporary French Translation Theory* (Expanded Edition), Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2023, First edition co-edited by Xu Jun and Yuan Xiaoyi, Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 1998, 16-17.

integration of theory with practice. Whether it is Ladmiral's "essential elements of translation theory" and his emphasizing the experience of teaching in translation, or Seleskovitch and Lederer's "interpretive translation theory," there is always a place for translation and interpreting practice in their theory.

3) There is also a special emphasis, particularly in more recent years, on researches into the theory of translating between specific language pairs such as between English and French or German and French, and on the rules and techniques of translating by means of making rhetorical and structural contrasts between the language pairs involved.

Indeed, by drawing on what can be described as characteristically French features such as the above, Xu has the following to say in his endeavour to Sinicize the contemporary French experience in TS research for a Chinese audience:

In order for a true discipline of translation studies to eventually establish itself, it is essential for it to be based on a research methodology that puts theory into practice; a research vision that is multi-dimensional; a research reservoir of means that are complementary to one another; and a spirit and effort in the researcher that never diminish. (Xu, *Contemporary French Translation Theory [Expanded Edition]* 17)

IV. Advancing a Holistic and Panoramic View of Translation and Translation Studies

Having examined Xu's researched topics in the preceding sections, discussion of what constitutes the most essential part of Xu's contribution to contemporary translation studies in China is in now order. As I see it, this third category of Xu's work—and there is a substantial amount of it that he has accomplished through the publication of a large number of books, journal articles and book chapters, either authored, co-authored, edited, or co-edited—all jointly comes to crystallise itself in his advancing of a comprehensive general view on translation, a view that I would venture to use a term of my own making to designate, namely a "Holistic and Panoramic View of Translation."

For sure, what has been discussed in the previous sections must have all contributed to the overall formulation of this view. However, especially from a theoretical TS research point of view, the more revealing part of his thinking on translation and on the study of translation is found in such major works as *Introducing Translation: A Textbook for MTI* (2009), *Starting from Translation: On Translation and Translation Studies* (2014), *Introducing Translation Studies*

(2009/2021), *Introducing Chinese Translation Studies since the Country's Opening Up to the World (1978-2018)* (2018), and *On Translation (Revised Edition)* (2023). Of these, the last piece can be regarded as the most representative, from which we may get a deep insight into the dynamics of Xu's "Holistic and Panoramic" view on translation, i.e., how this view is formulated and how it functions in impacting our understanding of translation in China. Therefore, our discussion in the remaining part of the current section will be mainly focused on this monograph.

But before proceeding to the work in greater detail, it may also be meaningful to take a quick look into the other four books on the above list, which are considered to have each contributed in their own way to the crystallization of Xu's general theoretical stance. As the name suggests, the first one, *Introducing Translation: A Textbook for MTI* (2009), is written for the purpose of teaching postgraduate students on the professional MTI (or: Master of Translation and Interpreting) programmes in China, which were initiated in 2007. But it is not a textbook in the ordinary sense, not in the sense of mere practice-oriented taught programmes. It is a textbook aimed to address both basic facts-related and theoretically/critically challenging questions, including: What is translation? What is it that we translate? Who translates? What are the functions of translation? What factors are there that affect the act of translation? What problems are there that the translator may encounter in the process of translation? How do we evaluate or assess the quality of a translation? How do we understand the meaning and the nature of translation and translation studies, especially in multi-cultural communication contexts, and so on? The second book, titling *Starting from Translation: On Translation and Translation Studies*, released in 2014, arises from some of Xu's published research papers. The topical areas that the book covers include: (i) the relations between translation and the original, different levels of the act of translation, and the translator's choices; (ii) translational subjectivity, cultural differences, the cultural perspective of translation studies, motivations of translation, "creative treason" in translation, and the space and limitations for understanding and interpretation; and (iii) translation criticism, translation value, translation assessment, the mission of translation, the tasks of translation research, and future possibilities of translation studies. The two volumes that come next on the list, i.e., *Introducing Translation Studies* (2009/2021) and *Introducing Chinese Translation Studies since the Country's Opening Up to the World (1978-2018)* (2018), are both collorative book projects with Xu as first co-editor for one and chief editor for the other. To some degree, these volumes are the Chinese kind of *Translation Studies Readers* like the various English TS book projects, for example, those edited and published by Chesterman (1989), Venuti

(2021) and Baker (2010). Although the chapters of each of the two books are separate contributions from a team of well-known TS authors in China including Xu himself, covering an important range of translation studies topics (10 for the former and 12 for the latter), it is nevertheless also much due to the meticulous work of organization, coordination and overall structuring by Xu the project initiator and editor/co-editor that makes both projects so significant and influential that they became prize winners from the Chinese Ministry of Education, with one in 2013 and the other in 2023. In large measure, such prizes do not mean a simple honour granted to the specific publications concerned, but they serve as a general recognition of the work that has been going on in the Chinese TS research field, i.e., the kind of work in which Xu has played a leading role in accomplishing over these past years.

Now back to our primary interest in the aforesaid monograph, i.e., *On Translation*. In Xu's own opinion, this is his "most important work as far as translation theory is concerned" (Xu, *My New Reflections on Translation* 2), or, as I have described above, it is the most representative work that Xu has written from which we can obtain an understanding of his philosophy of translation. In other words, this is where we find all the major points of view that Xu has delivered throughout the years on issues of the theory and practice of translation.

Its first edition published in 2003, second in 2014 and latest revised in 2023, the book comprises 7 chapters and an introduction. A careful reading of the introduction and the various chapters and sub-sections of the book would reveal the "Holistic and Panoramic" nature of Xu's general theory of translation. As expected, the Introduction provides a broad overview of what the author has had to offer by the writing of the book. More specifically, it explains the why, how and what issues relating to his writing, i.e., why he is writing the book, how he writes it, and what he intends to put into it or what breakthroughs he has got in store for it, and so on. Chapter 1, entitled *On the Nature of Translation*, addresses the basic issues of translation involving our general understanding of translation, translation history, the growing importance of translation research, the necessity of maintaining self-identity for translation and translation studies, etc. Chapter 2, *On the Process of Translation*, discusses the practical as well as the theoretical aspects of the translation process, the space and limitations for interpretation in translation, the life span of translated texts and its possibility and mechanisms of extension. Chapter 3, *On Meaning and Translation*, tackles such issues as the philological perspective for the handling of meaning in translation, Saussurean linguistics on meaning, the issue of determinacy and objectivity of meaning, how meaning can be classified, and how

meaning is reproduced in interlingual communication. Chapter 4, *On Influencing Factors in Translation*, concerns itself with such elements in translation as the cultural and social context, the ideological and political dimensions of translation, translational motivation and conception, and the role of linguistic relations and translation competence. Chapter 5, *On Translational Conflicts*, examines the dialectics of translational relationships such as between translatability and untranslatability, differences and similarities, and form and spirit. Chapter 6, *On the Subjectivity of Translators*, looks into the translator's identity, translational fidelity and treason, creative treason vs. the translatorial subjectivity, and inter-subjectivity and the fusion of horizons. Chapter 7, *On Translation Value and Criticism*, discusses such issues as the positioning of translation, the value of translation, the practical needs of translation criticism, the approaches to translation criticism, the principles and methods of translation criticism, and the importance of regarding translation criticism as a for ever on-going necessity in the discourse of translation. In sum, by bringing all these issues into discussion, Xu strives to make a whole series of 11 points of view, which, as presented by himself in the Introduction, can be described as follows:

1) Translation is a practice-oriented activity, but its phenomenon is becoming more and more complex and more and more diversified, and so our understanding and definitions of it must keep ahead with the times;

2) Translation is a historical happening, and with it our purpose of translation and our ways of how to translate, and because of this for ever developing nature of translation our approaches to it must also change and develop;

3) Translation is communicating involving complex cross-cultural exchanges, of which the mediating role of the translator is pivotal, and so researching into how best the translator fulfils this mediating role remains one of the central tasks of translation studies;

4) Translation is a multi-layered activity, and so in order to fully understand the true nature of translation it is imperative for researchers not to stay one-sided in viewing translation, but to adopt a comprehensive approach to it, embracing the good elements from all sides, be they literary, linguistic or otherwise;

5) The study of translation must be a scientific endeavour but its scientificity primarily lies in that of its methodology; whereas efforts must be encouraged to apply scientific means to solving translation problems such as hypothesising about the possible mechanisms of translation, it is nonetheless also important to exercise prudence in the hypothesising and theorising process;

6) Translation can be approached from two levels of reference, i.e., a static

level of reference and a dynamic one, with the former pointing to the product of translation and the latter the process; currently, it is the dynamic facet of this referencing, i.e., the process of translation, that requires research attention all the more;

7) Translation is not a from-text-text, close-end process, but an activity that requires understanding from beyond a narrow-minded perspective to a perspective involving history, society and culture; it is an activity that requires thinking not only about “how to do it,” but more about “why doing it;”

8) The training of translation talent depends on development of the theory of translation teaching, which constitutes an important part of the theory of translation at large; and in this connection we need to draw upon the research outcomes from colleagues abroad, especially those in the research field of translation quality evaluation and assessment;

9) Translation research should go out of the ivory tower to concern itself with cultural and social phenomena, hence to draw attention directed at translation from such people as philosophers, sociologists, linguists, writers and so forth; and also to carry out research on readers’ responses, and their aesthetic expectations and cultural values;

10) It is important to find proper, dialectically-balanced solutions to the potential problems of trying to delink translation theory from practice, so that theories of translation come from practice and are put to the test of practice; but the practical value of translation theory must not be overemphasised, for translation is not mere practice at face value but it has a higher goal to meet, the goal of serving human communication and development;

11) The disciplinary construction and development of translation studies are a long-term task that cannot succeed without the joint efforts by fellow researchers, and, especially in terms of the undertaking of major research projects in the field, disciplinary success largely depends on enhanced collegial collaboration within the professional TS communities both at home in China and on the international arena.

Clearly, by examining these 11 specific points of view, and by reading through the entire volume and absorbing the theoretical points that Xu has made on all other occasions, it is not difficult to see why I have described Xu’s view as of a “Holistic and Panoramic” nature. This is a view that he has been advancing throughout his scholarly trajectory in translation and translation studies. As we have seen, it is a “Holistic” view because it emphasises the interdependence of the various points that he has been making through the chapters and subsections of the monograph, so that these individual points become coherent and cohesive parts of an organic whole; and

it is also a “Panoramic” view because, being comprehensive in its argumentation, it has covered all major discursive issues on translation, ranging from the practice to the theory of translation, from the principles to the methods and skills of translation, and from the functions and values of translation to translation criticism, and further to the teaching of translation as well as to education in translation and translation studies as an important discipline in academia.

Concluding Remarks

Produced across a broad span of some 40 years, i.e., from the time he and myself first met and each made our first major paper presentations as emerging young scholars at the Yantai national conference on literary translation back in 1985 up to the very present, Xu’s plentiful ideas over varied topics involving his personal experience and theoretical thinking about translation have firmly placed him as one of the most outstanding figures in the study of translation in China. He is particularly celebrated for his achievements as a translation practitioner and a theoretical thinker on the translation of French literature, and as a resourceful literary and translation critic and translation studies researcher.

This above comment, then, helps bring us back to the very premise that I have made at the onset of our argument that, though translation theorists are not automatically capable translation practitioners at the same time, there exists no inevitable or unsurmountable barrier to prevent good theorists from becoming good practitioners, or *vice versa*. On this point, I quite agree with the position maintained by Ye Li in his article on “the scholarly writer vs. the writerly scholar,” in which he holds that, with gift, capability and experience, writers can certainly also be scholars, and scholars also writers at the same time, and that this is particularly true in cases where one’s scholarly and writerly trajectories of interest and talent coincide and overlap.¹ As I see in Xu, his dual role as translator and translation theorist first began with his strong interest in the practice of translation; and then it continued productively throughout his life-long career as a university teacher with concurrent interests in both the theory and practice of translation. He has not only been an ardent translator but also a trained translation scholar, a scholar who translates and teaches, critiques and researches translation, all with equal enthusiasm and devotion. It is with this multi-dimensional enthusiasm and devotion that he has contributed in remarkable and significant ways to the development of contemporary

1 See Ye Li, “Further Thoughts on ‘the Scholarly Writer’ vs. ‘the Writerly Scholar,’” 20 Feb. 2024. Available at: <https://www.chinawriter.com.cn/n1/2022/0322/c404033-32380876.html>, 2022. Accessed 20 Nov. 2023.

translation studies on the Chinese arena.

Works Cited

- Albir, Amparo Hurtado. *La Notion de Fidélité en Traduction*. Paris: Didier-Erudition, 1990.
- Bai Liping. "Reflections on the Debate Concerning the Different Chinese Versions of *The Red and the Black*." *Archiv Orientální* 2 (2017): 317-328.
- Baker, Mona. ed. *Critical Readings in Translation Studies*. London and New York: Routledge, 2010.
- Ballard, Michel. *La Traduction: De la Théorie à la Didactique*. Lille: Presses Universitaires de Lille, 1984.
- Ballard, Michel. *La Traduction à L'université: Recherche et Propositions Didactiques*. Lille: Presses Universitaires de Lille, 1993.
- 巴尔胡达罗夫: 《语言与翻译》, 蔡毅等编译。北京: 中国对外翻译出版公司, 1985 年。
- [Barkhudarov, Leonid. *Language and Translation*, translated by Cai Yi et al. Beijing: China Translation and Publishing Co. Ltd., 1985.]
- 包振南: “开拓翻译理论研究的新途径——介绍卡特福德著《翻译的语言学理论》”, 《外语教学与研究》3 (1982): 68-73。
- [Bao Zhennan. "Introducing John Catford's *A Linguistic Theory of Translation*." *Foreign Language Teaching and Research* 3 (1982): 68-73.]
- Berman, Antoine. *L'Épreuve de L'Étranger. Culture et Traduction dans L'Allemagne Romantique*. Paris: Gallimard, 1984.
- . *The Experience of the Foreign: Culture and Translation in Romantic Germany*, translated by S. Heyvaert. New York: State U of New York P, 1992.
- . *Pour une Critique des Traductions: John Donne*. Paris: Gallimard, 1995.
- Bonnefoy, Yves. *Entretiens sur la Poésie*. Neuchâtel: La Baconnière, 1981.
- . *La Communauté des Tradcteurs*. Strasburg: Presses Universitaires de Strasburg, 2000.
- Bruni, Leonardo. "On the Correct Way to Translate." *Western Translation Theory from Herodotus to Nietzsche*, edited by Douglas Robinson. Manchester: St. Jerome Publishing, 1997. 57-60.
- 蔡毅: “翻译理论的语言学派——介绍巴尔胡达罗夫的《语言与翻译》”, 《翻译通讯》(现《中国翻译》) 6 (1982): 12-17。
- [Cai Yi. "Introducing Leonid Barkhudarov's *Language and Translation*." *Translators' Notes* (now *Chinese Translators Journal*) 6 (1982): 12-17.]
- Chesterman, Andrew. *Readings in Translation Theory*. Helsinki: Oy Finn Lectura Ab, 1989.
- Dejean le Féal, Karla. "La Pédagogie Raisonnée de la Traduction." *Meta* 2 (1993): 155-197.
- 方平: “历史将给予充分的肯定——评《文字·文学·文化——〈红与黑〉汉译研究》”, 《批评与阐释》, 许多编。杭州: 浙江大学出版社, 2019 年, 第 28-31 页。
- [Fang Ping. "History Will Give It Full Credit—Review of *Language, Literature and Culture: A Study of the Translated Versions into Chinese of The Red and the Black*." *Criticism and Interpretation: An*

- Anthology of Essays on Xu Jun's Works of Translation and Translation Studies*, edited by Xu Duo. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2019. 28-31.]
- 傅雷: “翻译经验点滴”, 《翻译论集》, 罗新璋编。北京: 商务印书馆, 1984年, 第625-629页。
- [Fu Lei. “A Few Remarks about My Experience of Translation.” *An Anthology of Essays on Translation*, edited by Luo Xinzhang. Beijing: Commercial Press, 1984. 625-629.]
- Gouanvic, Jean-Marc. *Sociologie de la Traduction. La Science-fiction Américaine dans L'Espace Culturel Français des Années 1950*. Arras: Presses de l'Université d'Artois, 1999.
- 卡特福德: 《翻译的语言学理论》, 穆雷译。北京: 旅游教育出版社, 1991年。
- [Catford, John. *A Linguistic Theory of Translation*, translated by Mu Lei. Beijing: Tourism Education Press, 1991.]
- Ladmiral, Jean-René. *Traduire: Théorèmes pour la Traduction*. Paris: Gallimard, 1994.
- Larose, Robert. *Théories Contemporaines de la Traduction*. Québec: Presses de l'Université du Québec, 1989.
- Lavault, Élisabeth. *Fonction de la Traduction en Didactique des Langues*. Paris: Didier Érudition, 1987.
- 刘云虹、许钧: “异的考验——关于翻译伦理的对谈”, 《外国语》2 (2016): 70-77。
- [Liu Yunhong and Xu Jun. “The Experience of the Foreign: An Interview on Translation Ethics.” *Foreign Languages* 2 (2016): 70-77.]
- Meschonnic, Henri. *Pour la Poétique, Épistémologie de L'Écriture, Poétique de la Traduction*. Paris: Gallimard, 1973.
- Mounin, Georges. *Les Problèmes Théoriques de la Traduction*. Paris: Gallimard, 1963.
- 乔治·穆南: “翻译与文化的多样性”, 许钧译, 《语言与翻译》1 (1991): 73-77。
- [Mounin, Georges. “On Translation and Cultural Diversity,” translated by Xu Jun. *Language and Translation* 1 (1991): 73-77.]
- : “翻译与‘世界映象’理论”, 许钧译, 《语言与翻译》3 (1991): 71-75。
- [—, “Translation and ‘World Mapping’ Theory,” translated by Xu Jun. *Language and Translation* 3 (1991): 71-75.]
- : “翻译与‘世界映象’理论”(续), 许钧译, 《语言与翻译》4 (1991): 64-68。
- [—, “Translation and ‘World Mapping’ Theory” (continued), translated by Xu Jun. *Language and Translation* 4 (1991): 64-68.]
- 潘文学: “谈谈‘等值翻译’”, 《教学与研究》6 (1954): 58-61。
- [Pan Wenxue. “Some General Remarks about Andrei Fedorov's Concept of ‘Translation Equivalence’.” *Teaching and Research* 6 (1954): 58-61.]
- Peeters, Jean. *La Médiation de L'Étranger. Une Sociolinguistique de la Traduction*. Arras: Presses de l'Université d'Artois, 1999.
- Pergnier, Maurice. *Les Fondements Sociolinguistiques de la Traduction*. Paris: Librairie Honoré Champion, 1978.
- Seleskovitch, Danica and Marianne Lederer. *Interpréter pour Traduire*. Paris: Didier Érudition, 1984.

谭载喜:“翻译是一门科学——评介奈达著《翻译科学探索》”,《翻译通讯》(现《中国翻译》) 4 (1982): 4-10。

[Tan Zaixi. “Introducing Eugene Nida’s *Towards a Science of Translating*.” *Translators’ Notes* (now *Chinese Translators Journal*) 4 (1982): 4-10.]

——:“奈达和他的翻译理论”,《外国语》5 (1989): 28-35+49。

[—.“Nida and His Translation Theory.” *Foreign Languages* 5 (1989): 28-35+49.]

——:“奈达论翻译的性质”,《翻译通讯》(现《中国翻译》) 9 (1983): 37-40。

[—.“Nida on the Nature of Translation.” *Translators’ Notes* (now *Chinese Translators Journal*) 9 (1983): 37-40.]

——:《西方翻译简史》。北京:商务印书馆,1991年。

[—.*A Short History of Translation in the West*. Beijing: Commercial Press, 1991.]

——:“中国翻译研究:回望·反思·前瞻”,《中国翻译》4 (2012): 7-9。

[—.“Translation Studies in China: Retrospection, Prospection and Reflection.” *The Chinese Translators Journal* 4 (2012): 7-9.]

谭载喜、Eugene A. Nida:“论翻译学的途径”,《外语教学与研究》1 (1987): 24-30。

[Tan Zaixi and Eugene A. Nida. “Approaches to Translation.” *Foreign Language Teaching and Research* 1 (1987): 24-30.]

Venuti, Lawrence, ed. *The Translation Studies Reader (Fourth Edition)*. Abingdon, Oxon and New York, NY: Routledge, 2021.

王宗炎:“纽马克论翻译理论和翻译技巧”,《翻译通讯》(现《中国翻译》) 1 (1982): 11-17。

Wang Zongyan. “Peter Newmark on the Theory and Craft of Translation.” *Translators’ Notes* (now *Chinese Translators Journal*) 1 (1982): 11-17.

许钧:“中外交流,文化互鉴——诺贝尔文学奖得主莫言与勒克莱齐奥的交往与对话”,《外语教学与研究》1 (2018): 126-132+161。

[Xu Jun. “On Exchanges and Emulations between Chinese and Foreign Cultures: The Interactions between Mo Yan and Le Clézio.” *Foreign Language Teaching and Research* 1 (2018): 126-132+161.]

——:《翻译概论》(全国翻译硕士专业学位 MTI 系列教材)。北京:外语教学与研究出版社,2009年。

[—.*Introducing Translation: A Textbook for MTI*. Beijing: Foreign Language Teaching Research Press, 2009.]

——:“文字·文学·文化——关于‘文字翻译’与‘文学翻译’”,《南京大学学报(哲学·人文科学·社会科学)》1 (1996): 168-172。

[—.“Language, Literature and Culture: About ‘Literal Translation’ and ‘Literary Translation’.” *Journal of Nanjing University (Philosophy, Humanities and Social Sciences Edition)* 1 (1996): 168-172.]

——:“文学翻译、文化交流与学术研究的互动——以我和勒克莱齐奥的交往为例”,《外语教学》

3 (2018): 71-77.

[—, “Literary Translation, Cultural Exchange and Academic Interaction: With Special Reference to My Engagement with Le Clézio.” *Foreign Language Teaching* 3 (2018): 71-77.]

——: 《关于翻译的新思考》。杭州: 浙江大学出版社, 2020 年。

[—, *My New Reflections on Translation*. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2020.]

——: “诗意诱惑与诗意生成——试论勒克莱齐奥的诗学历险”, 《浙江大学学报(人文社会科学版)》5 (2016): 12-25。

[—, “Poetic Temptation and Generation: The Poetic Adventure of Le Clézio.” *Journal of Zhejiang University (Philosophy, Humanities and Social Sciences Edition)* 5 (2016): 12-25.]

——: “从士兵到教授——访龙游籍著名翻译家、南京大学研究生常务副院长许钧”, 2023 年 11 月 20 日。〈<https://www.translators.com.cn/archives/2012/05/4790>. Accessed 29 Sept. 2024>.

[—, “From Soldier to Professor: An Interview with Xu Jun,” 20 Nov. 2013. Available at:

<https://www.translators.com.cn/archives/2012/05/4790>, 2012. Accessed 29 Sept. 2024.]

——: 《从翻译出发——翻译与翻译研究》。上海: 复旦大学出版社, 2014 年。

[—, *Starting from Translation: On Translation and Translation Studies*. Shanghai: Fudan UP, 2014.]

——: 《翻译论》。南京: 译林出版社, 2023 年。

[—, *On Translation*. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2023.]

——: “翻译是历史的奇遇——我译法国文学”, 《外国语》2 (2017): 97-105。

[—, “Translating Is a Happy Act of Encountering in History: My Story of Translating French Literature.” *Foreign Languages* 2 (2017): 97-105.]

许钧编: 《当代法国翻译理论(增订本)》。南京: 译林出版社, 2023 年。

[Xu Jun, ed. *Contemporary French Translation Theory (Expanded Edition)*. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2023.]

——: 《文字·文学·文化——〈红与黑〉汉译研究(增订本)》。南京: 译林出版社, 2011 年。

[—, *Language, Literature and Culture: A Study of the Translated Versions into Chinese of The Red and the Black (Expanded Edition)*. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2011.]

——: 《改革开放以来中国翻译研究概论(1978-2018)》。武汉: 湖北教育出版社, 2018 年。

[—, *Introducing Chinese Translation Studies since the Country's Opening Up to the World (1978-2018)*. Wuhan: Hubei Education Press, 2018.]

许钧等: 《傅雷翻译研究》。南京: 译林出版社, 2016 年。

[Xu Jun et al. *On Fu Lei's Translations*. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2016.]

——: 《文学翻译的理论与实践: 翻译对话录(增订本)》。南京: 译林出版社, 2021 年。

[—, *The Theory and Practice of Literary Translation: Dialogues between Translators (Expanded Edition)*. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2021.]

许钧、高方: “试论勒克莱齐奥小说叙事中的‘记忆’——基于《寻金者》的分析”, 《外国文学研究》1 (2016): 16-24。

[Xu Jun and Gao Fang, “On the Role of Memory in Le Clézio's Novels: A Case Study of *Le Chercheur D'or*.” *Foreign Literature Studies* 1 (2016): 16-24.]

许钧、穆雷编：《翻译学概论》。南京：译林出版社，2009年。

[Xu Jun and Mu Lei, eds. *Introducing Translation Studies*. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2009.]

许钧、宋学智：《二十世纪法国文学在中国的译介与接受（增订本）》。南京：译林出版社，2018年。

[Xu Jun and Song Xuezhi. *The Translation and Reception of French Literature in China in the 20th Century (Expanded Edition)*. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2018.]

叶李：“‘作家学者化’与‘学者作家化’再思考”，2022年2月20日。

<<https://www.chinawriter.com.cn/n1/2022/0322/c404033-32380876.html>. Accessed 20 Nov. 2023>.

[Ye Li. “Further Thoughts on ‘the Scholarly Writer’ vs. ‘the Writerly Scholar’.” 20 Feb. 2024. Available at:

<https://www.chinawriter.com.cn/n1/2022/0322/c404033-32380876.html>. Accessed 20 Nov. 2023.]

赵稀方：《二十世纪中国翻译文学史（新时期卷）》。天津：天津百花出版社，2009年。

[Zhao Xifang. *A History of the 20th Century Literature Translated into Chinese (The New Period)*. Tianjin: Tianjin Baihua Press, 2009.]

庄绎传：“介绍 *After Babel*”，《中国翻译》6（1986）：45-46+64。

[Zhuang Yichuan. “Introducing George Steiner’s *After Babel*.” *Chinese Translators Journal* 6 (1986): 45-46+64.]

庄绎编译：《通天塔：文学翻译理论研究》。北京：中国对外翻译出版公司，1987年。

[—, trans-ed. *Studies on Literary Translation Theory: George Steiner’s After Babel*. Beijing: China Translation and Publishing Co. Ltd., 1987.]

坚定的实践在场者与执着的理论探索者：

许钧的翻译批评实践和研究

Firm Practical Presence and Determined Theoretical Explorer: Practice and Research in Xu Jun's Translation Criticism

刘云虹（Liu Yunhong）

内容摘要：翻译在人类文明发展进程中发挥着重要而独特的作用。翻译活动能否科学有效地开展，翻译批评是一个关键因素。一直以来，翻译批评面临两大任务：在实践层面，翻译批评要时刻在场并介入翻译活动；在理论层面，翻译批评要不断推进自身理论建设。许钧长期关注翻译批评，是坚定的实践在场者，也是执着的理论探索者，为深化翻译批评研究、促使翻译批评彰显其应有价值做出了卓越贡献。探析许钧在翻译批评领域的行动与追求，有助于我们进一步揭示翻译批评的核心问题、把握翻译批评的根本诉求，从而通过批评的导向性和建构性力量，推动我国翻译事业健康、繁荣地发展。

关键词：翻译批评；许钧；实践介入；理论探索

作者简介：刘云虹，南京大学外国语学院教授，主要研究领域为翻译学与法国文学。本文为浙江省哲学社会科学重点研究基地浙江大学中华译学馆自设课题“翻译基本问题研究”【项目批号：24zhyxg001】的阶段性成果。

Title: Firm Practical Presence and Determined Theoretical Explorer: Practice and Research in Xu Jun's Translation Criticism

Abstract: Translation plays an important and particular role in the development of human civilization. Translation criticism is one of key factors for whether translation activities could be carried out scientifically as well as effectively. For a long time, translation criticism has faced two major tasks: on the practical level, translation criticism should always be present therefore engaged in translation activities; on the theoretical level, translation criticism should constantly bolster its own theoretical construction. Xu Jun has long been paying attention to translation criticism, as a firm practical presence and a determined theoretical explorer, he has made remarkable contributions to deepening the study of translation criticism and boosting translation criticism to demonstrate its awaited value. An analysis of Xu

Jun's actions and pursuits in the field of translation criticism is conducive for us to further revealing translation criticism's core issues and grasping its fundamental demands, to promote the healthy and prosperous development of China's translation cause with translation criticism's leading and constructive power.

Keywords: translation criticism; Xu Jun; practical engagement; theoretical exploration

Author: Liu Yunhong, Ph.D., is Professor at the School of Foreign Studies, Nanjing University (Nanjing, 210023, China). Her academic research focuses on translation studies and French literature (Email: ningyunhan@126.com).

翻译在服务国家战略、推动社会发展、促进中外文明交流与互鉴等方面发挥着不可替代的作用,其重要性不言而喻。翻译活动能否科学有效地进行,翻译批评是一个关键因素。然而,“批评”一词与生俱来的附属性和否定性在某种程度上遮蔽了翻译批评的必要性,导致其理论与实践发展受到局限。翻译界之所以屡屡出现翻译质量低劣、翻译价值观和伦理观模糊等问题,翻译批评不力便是其中一个主要原因。鉴于此,翻译批评及其面临的两大任务迫切需要译学界给予足够重视并加以深入思考:在实践层面,翻译批评要时刻在场并介入翻译活动;在理论层面,翻译批评要不断推进自身理论建设。作为长期从事翻译实践与翻译研究的学者,许钧对这一点有着清醒的认识。他不仅呼吁要加强翻译批评,发挥翻译批评应有的作用,而且身体力行地介入翻译批评实践、探索翻译批评理论,在理论与实践的积极互动中推进翻译批评研究。无论实践介入,抑或理论探索,许钧始终坚持明确的价值导向,从中外文化平等对话、共同发展的高度去认识翻译、评价翻译。笔者曾经对许钧教授的翻译批评实践与思考进行探讨,也曾以访谈的形式同他就翻译批评问题展开交流,本文将着眼于许钧在翻译批评领域的所为与所思,力求更深入地理解一个具有强烈批评意识并勇于担当的批评者,也由此进一步揭示翻译批评的核心问题、把握翻译批评的根本诉求。

一、时刻在场,介入批评实践

有翻译,就必然要有翻译批评。许钧认为,翻译实践呼吁翻译批评,翻译批评对翻译实践的监督、评价和指导是翻译活动得以科学开展的必要保障。在专著《翻译论》中,他明确指出:“翻译批评的理性之光对于克服翻译实践的盲目性是不可或缺的,而翻译批评的伦理力量对于‘不健康的翻译道德’而言无疑是高悬着的一柄达摩克利斯之剑”(396)。基于这样的认识,许钧自20世纪90年代初开始便积极介入翻译批评实践,围绕《追忆似水年华》等汉译经典发表“自然传神、刻意求工——《追忆似水年华》卷一汉译本简评”、“句子与翻译——《追忆似水年华》汉译长句的处理”、“形象与翻译——

《追忆似水年华》汉译隐喻的再现”、“风格与翻译——《追忆似水年华》汉译风格的传达”等一系列评价文章、策划并组织《红与黑》汉译大讨论、就文学名著复译现象及其存在的问题进行剖析与思考、深入研究傅雷的翻译作品与翻译追求、密切关注中外文明交流与互鉴语境中的中华文化译介等等。30多年来,许钧始终致力于翻译批评,是一个坚定的批评实践在场者。从他的在场与介入,我们看到,正如翻译实践不应是盲目的,翻译批评也必须成为一种有意识、有理性的活动,才能彰显其应有价值。

1、注重翻译批评的实践来源

作为“翻译理论与翻译实践之间的基本纽带”(Newmark 184),翻译批评在理论和实践两个层面都与翻译有着密切关联。开展科学的翻译批评离不开翻译理论,正是翻译理论研究的发展促使翻译批评不断明确目标、拓展视野并逐步形成自身多元的方法论体系,同时,翻译批评也必须立足于翻译实践,以翻译实践为其来源和基础。就翻译实践之于翻译批评的重要意义,许钧指出,“翻译批评者应具有足够的翻译实践经验的积累,如果仅仅立足于理论层面对翻译的质量和 value 加以评判,而缺乏对翻译过程中的种种选择与考量的真实体验、缺乏对影响翻译结果的文本内外诸多因素的深入了解,这样的翻译批评往往只能是‘隔靴搔痒’,难以令人信服,也无法真正发挥对翻译活动应有的指导与促进作用”(刘云虹 许钧,“翻译批评与翻译理论建构——关于翻译批评的对谈”2-3)。考察许钧的翻译批评实践,不难发现,他之所以始终以坚定的在场者姿态介入翻译批评,一个非常重要的原因就在于他首先是译者,是译著等身的翻译家。许钧共翻译出版法国文学与社科经典著作30余部,代表性译著有普鲁斯特的《追忆似水年华(卷四)》(1990)、波伏瓦的《名士风流》(1991)、勒克莱齐奥的《诉讼笔录》(1992)、巴尔扎克的《邦斯舅舅》(1995)、雨果的《海上劳工》(1998)、昆德拉的《不能承受的生命之轻》(2003)、布尔迪厄的《关于电视》(2000)、贡巴尼翁的《现代性的五个悖论》(2005)等。这些翻译经验使得许钧对翻译活动的复杂性和丰富性有了更为直观的体会、更为深刻的理解,构成其翻译批评实践的直接动因。在关于翻译批评的对谈中,许钧表示,“《文学翻译批评研究》一书正是在很大程度上得益于我的翻译实践,如果我没有参加《追忆似水年华》的翻译,就不可能那么深切地体会到翻译普鲁斯特的困难,也不可能发现在翻译过程中出现的有关翻译原则、翻译方法方面的问题,自然也就不可能对诸如此类涉及翻译的根本性问题进一步加以思考和研究了”(刘云虹 许钧,“翻译批评与翻译理论建构”3)。确实,在《文学翻译批评研究》(1992)这部被学界誉为我国翻译批评研究“开山之作”的著作里,大半篇幅都针对《追忆似水年华》等经典作品汉译的分析与评价,内容涉及长句处理、形象再现、风格传达以及名著汉译不同版本比较、译本整体效果评价等方面。从感性认识到理性思考,从剖析翻译得失到探索具有普遍意义的翻译

理论问题，书中所论无一不从实践出发，源自翻译过程中通过遭遇问题并力求解决问题而积累的实实在在的经验。

诚如许钧所言，“若没有亲身译事的经历，是很难真正感受翻译活动中所涉及的各种要素和问题的；若不了解对翻译活动起着制约作用的诸要素和翻译的可能性及限度，要对译家的翻译活动和他们的译作进行合理、公允的评价，实际上是不可能的”（《江苏社科名家文库·许钧卷》24）。可见，作为一种对象性活动，翻译批评必须从翻译实践出发，而批评者自身的翻译实践尤为重要。不管批评的路径、方法、目标存在怎样的差异，立足翻译实践都是翻译批评的必要基础，也是翻译批评科学性与有效性的根本保障。

2、密切关注翻译现实

“在场”是一切批评活动应有的基本属性，也是许钧在翻译批评实践中的积极追求。他深知，“批评者只有真正成为有意识的在场者，才能对翻译实践中凸显的各种复杂问题与现象有深入的认识，才能对引发译学界讨论甚至争议的问题有深刻的把握，在这样的基础上，翻译批评的价值才有可能得以展现，漠然和疏离绝对不是翻译批评者应有的姿态”（刘云虹 许钧，“翻译批评与翻译理论建构——关于翻译批评的对谈”3）。鉴于此，许钧自觉担负起批评的在场之责，秉持明确的介入态度，对翻译现实持续予以关注，积极推动翻译批评发挥其应有作用。

关注翻译现实，首先在于准确把握翻译实践的现状。翻译批评以保障翻译事业健康发展为根本任务，因此，翻译批评者必须对翻译实践现状有清醒的认识和准确的把握。20世纪90年代初，随着中国加入《伯尔尼公约》，翻译领域掀起了一股外国文学经典名著复译的热潮，复译热中出现了译本粗制滥造甚至抄译、剽窃等不良现象。许钧敏感地发现这一现实情况，并觉察到这股复译热潮裹挟着尖锐的现实问题与复杂的理论问题，不仅事关译风、译德，更涉及文学事业能否健康发展的大问题。¹正是出于对那一时期翻译现实的深刻认识，1995年，许钧不失时机地发起并组织《红与黑》汉译大讨论，借助《红与黑》汉译这一典型案例，推动译学界就复译潮所折射的各种翻译问题进行深入的讨论与反思。回顾来看，《红与黑》汉译大讨论不仅加深了人们对翻译活动的理解，也有力促进了中国翻译理论研究。2005年，许钧在《中国图书评论》发表《翻译的危机与批评的缺席》一文，文章明确指出，尽管21世纪初我国翻译事业蓬勃发展，但译事昌盛的背后实则潜藏着重重危机，翻译领域存在如版权的盲目引进、翻译质量的多重失控、译风的普遍浮躁、翻译人才的青黄不接等诸多问题。直面这个“不容回避的事实”，许钧进一步分析指出，由于对翻译重大现实问题的某种麻木性、对具有倾向性的热点翻译问题的失语、对不良翻译现象缺乏应有的批评和斗争，翻译批评长期处于

1 参见许钧：《江苏社科名家文库·许钧卷》，南京：江苏人民出版社，2017年，第12页。

缺席状态，在很大程度上导致翻译危机的出现。¹由此，他强烈呼吁，“翻译批评应该切实担负起对翻译实践的监督、批评与引导的责任”（15），促进并保证翻译实践的理性开展。

关注翻译现实，也在于积极介入译学界普遍关注甚至有所争议的焦点问题。例如，20世纪80年代以来，译学界不断出现否定和批判严复“信达雅”之说的声音，有学者甚至认为学界对“信达雅”的推崇已经阻碍了中国翻译事业和译学研究的发展。“信达雅”是否过时的问题一度成为翻译学者们热议和争论的焦点。这不单关乎“信达雅”作为翻译原则和标准的合理性，更涉及如何看待中国传统译论的问题。对此，许钧于2006年在《中国图书评论》撰文，指出“信达雅”的生命力之强、影响度之广与译学界部分学者的摒弃论调形成强烈反差，值得译界深思，同时他认为，“‘信达雅’没有过时，关键在于要根据时代要求，注入新的活力，赋予新的内涵”（“‘信达雅’没有过时” 140）。2010年，许钧对翻译标准“信达雅”重新加以审视，深入剖析了“信达雅”在理论层面遭到的质疑、在实践层面产生的影响，并再度表明自己的立场：“对‘信达雅’的信奉不是盲目的，更不是所谓需要破除的‘迷信’，‘信达雅’说也并非虚无的神话，而是翻译实践中的切实原则和可靠支点。不仅如此，只要科学、理性地对待‘信达雅’说，它同样可以成为理论与实践之间的一根纽带，实现理论与实践的结合与互动”（刘云虹许钧，“理论的创新与实践的基点” 18）。

关注翻译现实，还在于积极介入翻译的重大现实问题。在新的历史时期，翻译担负着推动中华文化走向世界的重要使命，中国文学与文化外译受到各界的普遍关注，译介方法与模式、文化传播路径、读者认同与接受等相关问题不仅激发译学界的热烈探讨，也引起了不同观点的交锋。针对这一重大的翻译现实问题，许钧以批评者的敏感和自觉，积极介入并深入加以思考。他围绕中国文学外译与研究发表了一系列文章，如在《人民日报》发表的“‘忠实于原文’还是‘连译带改’”（2014）和“文化译介助推中华文化‘走出去’”（2017），在《中国翻译》《外国语》《外语教学理论与实践》《外语与外语教学》等学术期刊发表的“现状、问题与建议——关于中国文学走出去的思考”（2010）、“关于加强中译外研究的几点思考”（2014）、“文学翻译模式与中国文学对外译介”（2014）、“中华文化典籍的对外译介与传播——关于《大中华文库》的评价与思考”（2015）、“中国文化价值观与中华文化典籍外译”（2015）、“中国典籍对外传播中的‘译出行为’及批评探索——兼评《杨宪益翻译研究》”（2019）、“关于深化中国文学外译研究的几点意见”（2021），等等。同时，许钧在《小说评论》《外语与外语教学》等学术期刊主持“文学译介与传播”“中国文学外译研究”等专栏，推动译学界对中国文学外译与

1 参见许钧：“翻译的危机与批评的缺席”，《中国图书评论》9（2005）：13-15。

中国文化国际传播中涉及的翻译问题展开全面的思考与探索。此外，他还策划了对余华、毕飞宇、苏童、阎连科、池莉等中国当代著名作家的访谈，通过作家与译学界的互动了解文学界对中国文学外译的真实想法，以助力中国文学更好地“走出去”。

3、坚持批评的价值导向

批评在本质上是一种评价活动，具有明确价值意识和价值观念的评价主体是构成评价活动的核心要素之一。考察许钧的翻译批评实践，可以看到，于他而言，介入不仅是投身行动，更意味着价值与立场的坚守。谈及中国的文学翻译批评，就不能不提《红与黑》汉译大讨论，这次大讨论之所以成为中国文学翻译批评史上影响深远的一次批评事件，一个根本性的原因就在于其明确的理论与实践价值导向。翻译是一种以语言转换为形式的跨文化交际活动，文学翻译必然涉及文字、文学、文化三个维度。许渊冲认为翻译有文字翻译和文学翻译的区别，主张应将文字翻译改为文学翻译，从而发挥译语优势，在两种语言文化的竞赛中取胜。¹郭宏安则不赞成这种观点，他认为，“把文学翻译看作两种语言文化竞赛的译者实际上是置原作的风格于不顾的，也许他根本就认为原作没有风格，因为‘独特性’只为一入所有，是不能竞赛的”（159）。那么，三者的关系究竟该如何看待？对于这个问题，许钧的观点非常明确，在《红与黑》大讨论的阶段性成果《文字·文学·文化——〈红与黑〉汉译研究》的“代引言”中，他指出，“文字、文学与文化的关系，体现在文学作品的翻译中，应该是有机的、和谐的关系”（17），因此，“当我们读到带有‘欧化’倾向的西方文学作品时，不能简单地贬之为‘文字翻译’，也许这种翻译正是体现了一种传达异域文化、风俗、思维、审美的追求。而我们读到纯粹‘汉化’，不带一点翻译痕迹的外国文学翻译作品时，我们也不要轻率地就褒之为‘文学翻译’，因为若过分‘汉化’，原作所蕴含的异国情调，所承载的异域文化，就可能被冲淡，甚至被取代了，就达不到交流的目的”（20-21）。基于这种文字、文学与文化有机融合的价值取向，许钧在《红与黑》汉译讨论中做了大量的组织、分析、评论、总结与理论引导工作，推动各方更深刻地理解翻译活动的层次、内涵和根本目标，对翻译实践发挥了积极的导向性作用，也有力促进了翻译研究的深化。

在关注中华文化译介这一翻译重大现实问题并展开批判性思考的过程中，许钧同样具有鲜明的价值意识，“以翻译推动中外文化交流、互鉴与共生这一价值取向为基本出发点和根本目标”（刘云虹，“对话与共生”79）。推进中国文学与文化译介，是增强中华文明传播力与影响力的重要路径。在他看来，“翻译对外的深层次影响体现在价值观上，价值观的影响从某种角度来说就是一种文化的影响”，因此，他呼吁在对外译介中国文学与

1 参见许渊冲：“文字翻译与文学翻译”，《文字·文学·文化——〈红与黑〉汉译研究》，许钧编，南京：译林出版社，1996年，第70-73页。

文化时首先要形成一种中国文化价值观,要把握好中国文化里最核心的内容,将中华民族五千年历史中最本质、最优秀、最精华的部分以国外受众易于接受的方式一步步推介出去。¹同时,许钧特别注重翻译的跨文化交流本质,一贯主张翻译活动应以维护文化多样性为目标,切实推动不同文化之间的交流、沟通与对话,彰显其助力中外文明相互理解、共同发展的根本价值。基于这样的立场,许钧多次指出,译学界应高度注意并警惕中华文化译介中的单向主义与功利主义倾向。如,针对长期存在的中国文学译出和外国文学译入失衡的现象,他认为,“译介工作要积极适应中华文化‘走出去’的新形势,改变旧的以单向输入为主的文化交流模式,关注并推动中外文化之间的平等双向交流”(《关于翻译的新思考》62)。又如,针对翻译界和文化界在中国文学与文化外译相关探讨中表现出的某种急于求成的功利性心态,他指出,倘若“只从市场角度评价翻译作为一种工程项目的即期效益,而未从精神建构的角度衡量翻译作为一种促进人类文明交流和发展的事业所产生的长远的历史影响,急功近利,必然会导致翻译焦躁症与市场决定论”(《关于翻译的新思考》7)。因此,他强调,译学界要以中外文化的平等交流与有效对话为根本目标来思考中华文化译介所遭遇的困惑和问题,在文学作品的功利性被接受与文化价值的真正被认识之间做出理性选择。

二、不懈探索,构建批评理论

笔者在《翻译批评研究》一书中曾指出,由于缺乏理论的指引,翻译批评在相当长的时期里一直处于非理性状态,往往拘泥于“技”的层面的探讨,被局限在“挑错式”与否定性的评价中,甚至被简约为“好”与“坏”的评判,而科学意识和理性精神的缺失导致翻译批评实践的开展难以令人满意,其应有的价值和意义无从体现。²可以说,翻译批评理论研究的滞后严重制约着批评实践的理性开展,也使其本该具有的作用得不到发挥。因此,加强自身理论建设是翻译批评内在的必然诉求。许钧深刻地认识到理论构建之于翻译批评的重要性,在介入翻译批评实践的同时,积极投身翻译批评理论探索。在国内外译学界,许钧都可谓首开文学翻译批评理论研究先河之人。他于1992年出版的翻译批评研究专著《文学翻译批评研究》是我国第一部关于文学翻译批评的理论著作,在国际翻译批评研究领域,这部著作的问世也具有显著的开创性意义。许钧长期关注并从事翻译批评理论研究,除了上述文学翻译批评研究专论外,在《翻译论》(2003)、《翻译概论》(2009)、《翻译论(修订本)》(2014/2023)、《翻译概论(增订本)》(2020)等专著以及《翻译学概论》(2009)、《改革开放以来中国翻译研究概论(1978-2018)》(2018)、《翻

1 参见许钧等:《翻译与翻译研究——许钧教授访谈录》,杭州:浙江大学出版社,2018年,第63-64页。

2 参见刘云虹:《翻译批评研究》,南京:南京大学出版社,2015年,第2-3页。

译学概论》(2023)等编著中都辟有专章对翻译批评展开理论探索。在《文学翻译批评研究》一书的“后记”中,许钧直言无意做从理论到理论的研究,而要从自己对翻译活动的基本认识出发,结合对具体翻译作品的评析,力求在探索合理、科学、公允地评价文学翻译的基本途径与方法上有所收益,促使译学界对文学翻译批评形成比较统一、系统的看法。¹这番话既表明许钧对于翻译批评理论探索的一份初心,也是此后30余年间他在翻译批评理论探索中的不懈追求。具体而言,他特别注重以下三个方面。

1、从翻译定位出发,探索翻译批评理论

翻译批评以翻译活动为考察对象,通过实现翻译的价值而实现其自身价值。这就意味着,探索翻译批评理论,首先要对翻译进行定位,把握翻译的本质与价值。在《文学翻译批评研究》这部极具探索性的翻译批评理论著作中,许钧关注的首要问题便是界定翻译的本质。他开宗明义地指出,围绕翻译这项复杂活动及其必然产生的一系列问题展开探究,必须对翻译活动有深入的认识,而以往之所以在翻译本质上难以形成比较统一的见解,一个重要的原因就是人们在翻译理论研究中缺乏层次性的观点。²鉴于此,在展开文学翻译批评理论性探讨之前,许钧着力分析并揭示翻译活动的三个层次:翻译的思维层次、翻译的语义层次和翻译的美学层次。他认为,具有全人类性的思维是翻译活动的基础,“当各民族的语言源起时,虽然处于各自不同的时间和空间,但对客观事物本质属性认识的思维活动则是一致的。正因为这一同一性,各民族的语言在语音、词汇、语法千差万别的情况下,才可互译”(2)。思维活动的同一性为翻译活动提供了前提条件,但思维的表达需要语言,翻译活动始终面临着用一种语言符号传达另一种语言符号之意义的任务,这就必然涉及翻译的语义层次。思维层次是语义层次的基础,语义层次是思维层次的体现,两者间有着密切关系。在对语义层次的论述中,许钧指出应廓清语义的范围,将语义分为语言意义和言语意义两个方面,如此方能“有助于我们最大限度地传达语义”(7)。语言除了传情、达意之外,还有其美学功能,因此翻译,尤其是文学翻译,不仅有思维层次和语义层次,还涉及更高的层次,即审美层次。翻译审美层次的活动包括感受原作的美和传达原作的美两个维度。³通过剖析翻译的不同层次,许钧在理论上对翻译活动的本质进行把握,这一方面为定位翻译奠定了基础,另一方面实际上也为避免翻译及其批评活动的盲目性提供了根本保障,正如许钧所言,“一个成功的翻译不可能在一个层次完成,它应该是各个必要层次和谐统一的产物”(15)。

定位翻译,不仅在于把握翻译的本质,还在于明确翻译的价值。翻译也好,翻译批评也好,要得以理性开展,就必须立足于正确的翻译价值观。在

1 参见许钧:《文学翻译批评研究》,南京:译林出版社,1992年,第194-195页。

2 参见许钧:《文学翻译批评研究》,南京:译林出版社,1992年,第1页。

3 参见许钧:《文学翻译批评研究》,南京:译林出版社,1992年,第1-15页。

《翻译论》中，许钧明确表示“翻译批评活动应以一定的‘翻译价值观’为基础”，并坚持以价值为导向探索翻译批评理论：“我们在探讨中，首先强调以正确的翻译观为指导，探讨翻译的作用，以建立我们的翻译价值观。在此基础上，再对翻译批评的理论问题，翻译批评的标准、原则与方法提出我们的看法”（23）。秉持这一原则，许钧从翻译活动所具有社会性、文化性、语言转换性、创造性和历史性本质特征出发，对翻译的社会价值、文化价值、语言价值、创造价值和历史价值进行了深入考察与细致分析。翻译的社会价值主要体现于翻译活动对社会交流与发展的强大推动作用，借助翻译，人类社会不断交流其创造的文明成果，互通有无，彼此促进。翻译的文化价值通常表现为跨文化交流中翻译对文化积累与拓展的积极推动作用，正是翻译，促使了各民族文化在空间上的拓展，在内涵上的丰富。翻译的语言价值从根本上说就是翻译活动对语言产生的作用和影响，既涉及语言本身的发展，也关乎语言变革带来的思想革新。翻译的创造价值体现在社会、文化和语言等多个层面，从社会角度看，任何社会活动都必须以交流为基础，交流有利于思想疆界的拓展，而思想的解放又构成了创造的基础；从文化角度看，翻译中导入的任何“异质”因素，都是激活目的语文化的因子，具有创新的作用；从语言角度看，为了真正引入新的事物、新的观念、新的思想，翻译中不可避免地要进行语言的创造性转换。翻译的历史价值蕴含在翻译对人类历史发展所做的实际贡献中，考察人类文明发展史，就会发现历史的每一次重大进步与发展都离不开翻译，都伴随着翻译的高潮；树立翻译的历史价值观，也意味着从历史的发展来看翻译活动不断丰富的内涵和不断扩大的可能性。¹

从根本上讲，翻译批评就是对翻译活动的理解与评价，只有深刻把握翻译的本质与价值，才能对翻译进行科学定位，进而在其引导下开展翻译批评实践、探索翻译批评理论。这是许钧翻译批评研究中的自觉意识和明确追求。在这一点上，许钧与国际翻译批评领域代表性学者、法国翻译理论家安托万·贝尔曼（Antoine Berman）可以说不谋而合。贝尔曼在构建其翻译批评理论体系时同样十分强调要深入认识和理解翻译活动，他在梳理翻译批评现状时对特拉维夫学派以社会批评为导向的批评模式进行了严厉批判，根本原因就在于该批评模式对“自治性”这一翻译本质特征缺乏深刻把握，从而以“翻译文学”的概念混淆了文学移植与其中中心时刻“翻译”之间的关系。²

2、立足批评本质，系统构建翻译批评基本理论

改革开放促进了思想解放，为我国翻译理论研究注入新的活力，但翻译批评的理论建设却处于相对落后的状态。从20世纪80年代末、90年代初来看，基本的翻译批评理论体系尚未形成，对翻译批评所涉诸多问题的认识都

1 参见许钧：《翻译论》，武汉：湖北教育出版社，2003年，第380-395页。

2 参见Antoine Berman, *Pour une critique des traductions: John Donne*, Paris: Editions Gallimard, 1995, 54-58.

比较模糊，这显然不利于翻译事业的发展。因此，许钧在翻译批评理论探索中始终追求的一个目标就是对翻译批评理论展开体系性研究，力求系统构建文学翻译批评的基本理论。秉持这样的追求，许钧对翻译批评的本质、目的、原则和方法等根本性问题进行了持续探索。

从理论上探究翻译应如何科学开展，首先要回答“什么是翻译批评？”这个问题。结合美国文学理论家韦勒克（René Wellek）的观点，许钧对翻译批评的概念加以界定，提出“翻译批评就是‘理解翻译与评价翻译’”，并进一步指出：“从狭义上讲，翻译批评是对翻译活动的理性反思与评价，既包括对翻译现象、翻译文本的具体评价，也包括对翻译本质、过程、技巧、手段、作用、影响的总体评价”（《翻译论》403）。这一界定不仅肯定了翻译批评的理解、反思与评价性本质，也明确了翻译批评的对象不是单一的，而是多元的，应包括翻译过程、翻译文本和翻译现象等多个方面。立足于此，许钧对翻译批评的目标也有清晰的认识，在他看来，翻译批评的目的“不仅仅在于对具体译作或译法作裁决性的是非判别，更在于对翻译活动何以进行、如何进行加以反思与检讨，进而开拓翻译的可行性，促进翻译活动健康而积极地发展，体现翻译活动具备的各种价值，真正起到翻译活动应有的作用”（《翻译论》403）。

翻译批评应避免盲目性，展现批评的理性力量，这就意味着翻译批评必须遵循科学的原则。在《文学翻译批评研究》中，许钧指出，那一时期的翻译批评要么“过死”，满足于挑出译文的错误，要么“太活”，仅凭主观印象便对译文做出结论式评判。针对这两个值得注意的不良倾向，许钧提出文学翻译批评的四个基本原则：（1）文学翻译批评不仅要对翻译的结果进行正误性的判别，更应重视翻译过程的深刻剖析；（2）文学翻译批评要突破感觉的体味，注重理性的检验；（3）文学翻译批评应该将局部的、微观的批评与整体的、宏观的评价有机地结合起来；（4）文学翻译批评应该注意发挥积极的导向作用，建立起新型的批评者与被批评者之间的关系。¹这四条原则有很强的针对性，既指向翻译批评的基本理念，也涉及翻译批评的对象、视野和方法论，同时，在强调外部批评与内部批评的结合、倡导翻译批评的建设性等方面凸显出创新性的理论价值。在《翻译论》中，许钧进一步深化其翻译批评理论探索，在肯定以上翻译批评原则仍具有适用性的基础上，补充了另外两条重要原则：一是翻译批评要坚持历史发展观，对翻译现象、翻译事件和具体文本的批评要从历史出发，将之置放于一定的历史环境中去考察；二是翻译批评要坚持文化观，要有一种宏大的文化视野，从文化交流的高度去评价翻译史和具体翻译活动中的一些重要问题，如翻译选择、文化立场、价值重构等。²翻译是在特定历史语境中进行的跨文化交际活动，有着显著的历

1 参见许钧：《文学翻译批评研究》，南京：译林出版社，1992年，第38-40页。

2 参见许钧：《翻译论》，武汉：湖北教育出版社，2003年，第415页。

史性和文化性,重视翻译的历史文化属性与价值是许钧在翻译研究中持有的基本立场。强调翻译批评的历史发展观和文化观,这既体现了许钧翻译批评思想的新发展,也彰显出上文所论的其翻译批评理论探索的一个特点,即注重从翻译定位出发探索翻译批评理论。

翻译批评的有效开展离不开科学的批评原则,也依赖于科学、合理的批评方法。《文学翻译批评研究》专门就文学翻译批评的基本方法进行了探讨,许钧表示,翻译批评最基本的方法是比较,也就是说,“我们的文学翻译批评,应该基于客观的、合理的、科学的比较”(44)。值得注意的是,在实际的批评活动中,面面俱到的比较与评价是不可能的,因此,他强调批评者要依据批评的目的选择批评的点、面和层次以及批评的视角。这一点得以明确之后,许钧归纳了六种翻译批评界通常使用的批评方法:(1)逻辑验证的方法;(2)定量定性分析方法;(3)语义分析的方法;(4)抽样分析的方法;(5)不同翻译版本的比较;(6)佳译赏析的方法。¹不难发现,那一时期的翻译批评主要针对文本展开,从翻译批评的本质和目标来看,文本比较固然不可或缺,但正如许钧所言,“远远不是惟一的方法”(《翻译论》415)。故而,在翻译批评研究过程中,许钧一直有意识地拓展翻译批评的理论路径,积极探索并革新翻译批评的方法,卓有成效地推动了翻译批评理论的系统性构建。

3、理论与实践互动,革新翻译批评方法

翻译具有社会性、文化性、创造性等多重本质特征,涉及语言、文化、历史、社会、意识形态等多重因素,是一项极其复杂的活动,面对翻译展开批评,就需要不断开拓视野,探索多样化的批评路径与方法。这是促使翻译批评超越文本比较的局限,从而更具广度、深度和效度的必要条件,也是加强翻译批评理论建设的重要内容。在这个意义上,《红与黑》汉译大讨论无疑是一次不可多得的有益尝试。译学界普遍认为,这次大讨论在我国文学翻译批评发展历程中占据举足轻重的位置,在深化我国翻译理论研究、促进翻译理论与实践的互动等方面做出了重大贡献。《红与黑》汉译大讨论之所以取得成功,一个不容忽视的原因就是它采用了具有创新性的批评方法。方法之新,首先在于读者问卷调查这一新颖的形式,如学者所言,“使用问卷调查的方式来获取读者反应的做法,在中国是从来没有过的”(王东风 21)。1995年7月1日的《文汇报》刊载《红与黑》读者意见征询表之后,许钧所在的南京大学西语系翻译研究中心收到了来自各个年龄层次、文化层次的316位读者的反馈意见,“每个人都在调查问卷里呈明了自己的态度和观点,尽管多是自发的经验积累和直觉指导下的漫谈,却恰恰为我们象牙塔里的专家学者们提供了许多新的视角、新的思路、新的层面”(许钧 袁筱一 89)。毋庸置疑,这样的收获正得益于问卷调查所架起的读者与翻译界之间沟通的桥梁。方法之新,更在于整个大讨论中明确的理论追求及其批评方法论意义。许

1 参见许钧:《文学翻译批评研究》,南京:译林出版社,1992年,第51-54页。

钩既是《红与黑》汉译大讨论的组织者，也是积极参与并有力推动讨论进程的批评者，他明确表示，“在有关《红与黑》汉译的整个讨论中，我们始终有一种清醒的理论意识，力图通过讨论，针对我国翻译界理论与实践往往相脱节的状况，以实际例子来说明两点：一是翻译是有理论的，而且存在着不同的理论与观点；二是翻译理论是有指导性的，在不同的理论与观点的指导下，会有不同的翻译实践”（刘云虹 许钧，“翻译批评与翻译理论建构”6）。出于这样的理论追求，这次大讨论深入剖析《红与黑》翻译所凸显的问题，并由此拓展开去，以更为宽广的理论视野对文学翻译的诸多具有普遍意义的问题予以关注，如翻译方法与译者翻译观及文化立场的关系、翻译再创造的“度”、历史文化因素对翻译的影响、翻译的风格、复译的伦理等等。通过对文学翻译基本问题、核心问题的深入探讨，《红与黑》汉译大讨论至少在以下几个方面有力发挥了翻译理论建构作用：第一，以代表性例证充分说明直译或意译不仅是翻译方法的选择，更是译者翻译立场的体现，具有丰富而深刻的伦理内涵；第二，将翻译置于文化交流的大背景下加以探讨，揭示翻译活动各要素、各层次之间的复杂关系，强调文字、文学与文化三者的和谐统一；第三，突出译者在翻译过程中的主体地位，对不同译者的翻译观、语言文化立场和审美价值取向进行深入分析，直接推动了我国翻译研究的“译者转向”；第四，关注读者接受，以读者的真实反应检视译者翻译动机与翻译方法选择的合理性。从形式、内容与追求来看，这场大讨论都力求突破翻译批评中往往存在的一种“是否判别”的简单化思维，真正立足于翻译动态过程、翻译场域各主体要素的互动以及翻译理论与实践的结合来考察翻译、评价翻译，凸显出鲜明的方法论意义。正鉴于此，《红与黑》汉译大讨论在国际译学界也产生了影响，法国大学出版社出版、列入法国著名的“我知道什么”系列丛书的《翻译》一书在其“翻译理论”章节里专门论及这次讨论，将之作为当代翻译批评理论与实践互动的典型案例加以介绍。¹

另外，特别值得一提的是，在1998至2000年间，许钧有针对性地与季羨林、萧乾、文洁若、叶君健、方平、赵瑞蕻、吕同六、杨武能、郭宏安等二十位在文学翻译领域卓有成就的翻译家进行交流，通过对谈的方式共同探讨翻译尤其是文学翻译的基本问题。2001年，访谈成果《文学翻译的理论与实践——翻译对话录》由译林出版社出版。正如许钧在该书增订本的“再版序”中所言，这一系列访谈有理论和实践两个层面的目的：在理论层面，通过学习、比较前辈优秀的译作，对文学翻译的一些具有共性的基本问题进行历时和共时的分析比较，进而上升到理性的思考，作出合理的、科学的描述和阐释，为认识文学翻译的本质、把握和处理翻译中面临的各种关系、实事求是地研究和解决好翻译中的基本问题提供指导，同时对中国文学翻译理论的系统、科学研究提供可靠的依据；在实践层面，与翻译家一起交流，以

1 参见 Michaël Oustinoff, *La traduction*, Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 2003, 64-65.

问题为中心,以他们丰富的翻译实践经验为基础,结合他们在实际翻译中所遇到的障碍和困难,对涉及文学翻译的一些重要方面进行深层次的思考与探索,进而挖掘他们的翻译思想,总结他们的翻译策略与方法,为年轻的翻译工作者指路。¹这一目标凸显出系列对谈的批评性质,更承载着翻译批评在认识翻译活动、阐释翻译行为、引导翻译事业上不可推卸的责任。加拿大 *Meta* 杂志第 49 卷第四期发表了许钧与刘和平合作撰写的文章,题为“文学翻译的经验总结与理论升华”,对这次讨论的理论追求与贡献加以详述。²无疑,我们再一次看到许钧在拓展翻译批评路径、革新翻译批评方法方面所做的探索,也再一次体会到他作为一个翻译批评者的强烈意识与敏锐洞察力。

结语

如季羡林所说,“翻译事业要发展,要健康地发展,真正起到促进中华文明发展的作用,就不能没有翻译批评”(季羡林 许钧 4)。无论引导翻译实践的理性开展、保证翻译评价的科学性,还是为翻译活动拓展新的可能,都离不开翻译批评,同时,翻译批评还应与翻译理论之间形成一种相互促进的关系,彰显其翻译理论构建功能。要实现翻译批评的多重价值,翻译批评者必须在强烈的责任感和批评意识的指引下,积极有效地介入翻译批评实践、系统深入地探索翻译批评理论。在这个方面,许钧堪称一位先行者和引领者,他数十年关注翻译批评,为翻译批评建设做出了突出而宝贵的贡献。他的翻译批评实践与研究不仅在国内译学界和文化界产生了重要影响,从国际译学界来看,也同样具有不可低估的奠基性意义。笔者曾经以许钧和安托万·贝尔曼这两位中西翻译批评研究领域的代表性人物为例,梳理中西翻译批评研究的共性和特性,通过比较发现,中西翻译批评研究在共通与互补中呈现出一种齐头并进的发展态势,合力推动翻译批评研究。³

在中外文化交流、文明互鉴的时代语境中,翻译被赋予新的历史使命,却也不断面临挑战,加强翻译批评的重要性和迫切性愈发凸显。对于翻译批评的未来发展,许钧特别强调批评要以问题为导向,关注翻译现实、坚守翻译价值。他在南京大学主办的《翻译研究》集刊开设“翻译观察”栏目,自创刊号开始每期撰文,提出值得译学界关注、探讨甚至警惕的新现象和新问题。每一次的“观察”,都诠释着许钧矢志不渝的追求:探索无止境,批评者永远在路上。

1 参见许钧:“再版序”,《文学翻译的理论与实践——翻译对话录(增订本)》,许钧等,南京:译林出版社,2010年,第2页。

2 参见 Xu Jun and Liu Heping, “Expériences et théorisation de la traduction littéraire en Chine,” *Meta* 4 (2004): 786-804.

3 参见刘云虹:“中西翻译批评研究的共通与互补——以许钧和安托万·贝尔曼为例”,《中国外语》6(2020): 83-89。

Works Cited

- Berman, Antoine. *Pour une critique des traductions: John Donne*. Paris: Editions Gallimard, 1995.
- 郭宏安: “我译《红与黑》”, 《文字·文学·文化——〈红与黑〉汉译研究》, 许钧编。南京: 译林出版社, 1996年, 第155-166页。
- [Guo Hong'an. “My translation of *The Red and the Black*.” *Text, Literature, Culture. Studies on Chinese Translations of The Red and the Black*, edited by Xu Jun. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 1996. 155-166.]
- 刘云虹: “中西翻译批评研究的共通与互补——以许钧和安托万·贝尔曼为例”, 《中国外语》6 (2020): 83-89.
- [Liu Yunhong. “The Commonality and Complementation between Chinese and Western Translation Criticism: Taking Xu Jun and Antoine Berman as an Example.” *Foreign Languages in China* 4 (2022): 72-80.]
- : “对话与共生——试析许钧关于中华文化译介的思考”, 《外国语》4 (2022): 72-80.
- [—, “Dialogue and Symbiosis: An Analysis of Xu Jun’s Thoughts on the Introduction of Chinese Culture to Other Cultures Through Translation.” *Journal of Foreign Languages* 4 (2022): 72-80.]
- : 《翻译批评研究》。南京: 南京大学出版社, 2015年。
- [—, *Research on Translation Criticism*. Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 2015.]
- 刘云虹、许钧: “理论的创新与实践的基点——翻译标准‘信达雅’实践再审视”, 《中国翻译》5 (2010): 13-18.
- [Liu Yunhong and Xu Jun. “Theoretical Innovations and Practical Applicability: ‘Faithfulness,’ ‘Expressiveness’ and ‘Elegance’ as Translation Criteria in Action.” *Chinese Translators Journal* 5 (2010): 13-18.]
- : “翻译批评与翻译理论建构——关于翻译批评的对谈”, 《外语教学理论与实践》4 (2014): 1-8.
- [—, “Translation Criticism and the Construction of Translation Theories: An Interview with Xu Jun.” *Foreign Language Learning Theory and Practice* 4 (2014): 1-8.]
- Newmark, Peter. *A Textbook of Translation*. London: Prentice Hall, 1988.
- Oustinoff, Michaël. *La traduction*. Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 2003.
- 王东风: “‘《红与黑》事件’的历史定位: 读赵稀方‘《红与黑》事件回顾——中国当代翻译文学史话之二’有感”, 《外语教学理论与实践》2 (2011): 17-23.
- [Wang Dongfeng. “Siting ‘the *Le Rouge et le Noir* Investigation Event’: Reflections on Zhao Xifang’s ‘A Review of Dispute over Chinese Translations of Stendhal’s *Le Rouge et le Noir*’.” *Foreign Language Learning Theory and Practice* 4 (2014): 1-8.]
- 许钧: 《江苏社科名家文库·许钧卷》。南京: 江苏人民出版社, 2017年。
- [Xu Jun. *Collected Works of Jiangsu Maestros in Social Sciences: Xu Jun*. Nanjing: Jiangsu People’s Publishing House, 2017.]
- : “翻译的危机与批评的缺席”, 《中国图书评论》9 (2005): 12-15.

- [—, “The Crisis of Translation and the Absence of Criticism.” *China Book Review* 9 (2005): 12-15.]
- : “‘信达雅’没有过时”, 《中国图书评论》8 (2006): 78-80.
- [—, “‘Faithfulness’, ‘Expressiveness’ and ‘Elegance’ Are Not Outdated.” *China Book Review* 8 (2006): 78-80.]
- : 《生命之轻与翻译之重》。北京: 文化艺术出版社, 2007 年。
- [—, *The Lightness of Life and the Heaviness of Translation*. Beijing: Culture and Art Publishing House, 2007.]
- : 《关于翻译的新思考》。杭州: 浙江大学出版社, 2020 年。
- [—, *New Reflections on Translation*. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2020.]
- : 《翻译论》。武汉: 湖北教育出版社, 2003 年。
- [—, *On Translation*. Wuhan: Hubei Education Press, 2003.]
- : “再版序”, 《文学翻译的理论与实践——翻译对话录(增订本)》, 许钧等。南京: 译林出版社, 2010 年。
- [—, “Preface to the Second Edition.” *Theory and Practice of Literary Translation—Dialogues on Translation (Revised Edition)*, Xu Jun et al. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2010.]
- : 《文学翻译批评研究》。南京: 译林出版社, 1992 年。
- [—, *Research on Literary Translation Criticism*. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 1992.]
- : 《文字·文学·文化——〈红与黑〉汉译研究》。南京: 译林出版社, 1996 年。
- [—, *Text, Literature, Culture: Studies on Chinese Translations of The Red and the Black*. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 1996.]
- Xu Jun and Liu Heping. “Expériences et théorisation de la traduction littéraire en Chine.” *Meta* 4 (2004): 786-804.
- 许钧等: 《翻译与翻译研究——许钧教授访谈录》。杭州: 浙江大学出版社, 2018 年。
- [Xu Jun, et al. *Translation and Translation Studies—Collected Interviews with Professor Xu Jun*. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2018.]
- 许钧、袁筱一: “为了共同的事业——《红与黑》汉译读者意见综述”, 《文字·文学·文化——〈红与黑〉汉译研究》, 许钧编。南京: 译林出版社, 1996 年, 第 88-100 页。
- [Xu Jun and Yuan Xiaoyi. “For the Common Cause—Review of Readers’ Opinions on Chinese Translations of *The Red and the Black*.” *Text, Literature, Culture. Studies on Chinese Translations of The Red and the Black*, edited by Xu Jun. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 1996. 88-100.]
- 许渊冲: “文字翻译与文学翻译”, 《文字·文学·文化——〈红与黑〉汉译研究》, 许钧编。南京: 译林出版社, 1996 年, 第 70-73 页。
- [Xu Yuanchong. “Literal Translation and Literary Translation.” *Text, Literature, Culture. Studies on Chinese Translations of The Red and the Black*, edited by Xu Jun. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 1996. 70-73.]

文化交流与文明互鉴：许钧的翻译文化观

Cultural Communication and Civilization Exchange: Xu Jun's Cultural View on Translation

蓝红军 (Lan Hongjun)

内容摘要：翻译观是影响翻译行为及翻译价值实现的重要内在因素。它普遍存在于译事主体之内，但人们未必对之形成认识自觉。翻译家许钧作为一名具有明确观念自觉的翻译工作者，他坚持以人的文化为翻译最高目的，保持人的精神主体性在文化翻译活动中始终在场。其翻译文化观不但指引其自身的翻译行为，而且成为引领中国译学发展的显著力量。在翻译工具日渐冲击翻译人主体性的当下，梳理许钧的翻译文化观，揭示一名中国当代翻译家成就获取的内在机制，能为新时代广大翻译从业人员认识人如何在翻译活动中发挥主体作用、彰显翻译活动价值提供思想启发。

关键词：翻译文化观；许钧；文化交流；文明互鉴

作者简介：蓝红军，广东外语外贸大学高级翻译学院教授，主要研究领域为译学理论批评与翻译思想史。本文系国家社科基金项目“中国翻译思想发生机制与发展路径研究”【项目批号：23BYY119】的阶段性成果。

Title: Cultural Communication and Civilization Exchange: Xu Jun's Cultural View on Translation

Abstract: Translation view is an important internal factor that determines translation behavior and realization of translation values. It is present in every subject involved in translation activities but may not necessarily be aware of. As a distinguished translation professional being quite conscious of his own translation view, Xu Jun takes serving human culture as the ultimate goal of translation activities and emphasizes the presence of spiritual subjectivity in them. His cultural view not only guides his own translation behavior, but also becomes a leading force in the field of Chinese translation studies. During a time when technology challenges the subjectivity of human translators, investigating Xu Jun's cultural view on translation and the inner mechanism of his achievement will hopefully help many contemporary translation professionals to realize how to give full play to human subjectivity and manifest values of translation in their respective translation activities.

Keywords: cultural view of translation; Xu Jun; cultural communication; civilization exchange

Author: Lan Hongjun, Professor at the Guangdong University of Foreign Studies (Guangzhou, 510420, China). The concentration of his study is on translation theory criticism of and intellectual history of translation (Email: alan.lan@163.com).

翻译观是人们在长期的翻译实践中逐渐形成的对翻译活动的总的看法,是翻译实践活动的指导思想。¹任何从事翻译活动者,都有其翻译观,或显或隐。当下翻译实践形态正在发生变化,翻译行业发展迅速,翻译主体的翻译观意识越来越明晰。同时,随着翻译研究的发展,人们对翻译的认识越来越丰富,观看翻译的视角日趋多元。翻译的“哲学观、科学观、艺术观与历史观”(方梦之 33),以及符号学翻译观、逻辑学翻译观、语用学翻译观、阐释学翻译观、解构主义翻译观、文化翻译观²等林林总总,极大地推动了对翻译复杂性的揭示。古今中外,人们表述过对翻译的看法可谓多矣,不过其中具有普遍性的“元”翻译观却并不多,翻译文化观就是有关翻译的基本观念之一。无论是研究个体翻译思想,还是认识时代翻译精神,我们都离不开对翻译家之翻译文化观的讨论。

许钧是一名与翻译有着“历史的奇遇”的翻译人,无论是翻译实践,翻译教学,还是翻译研究,都成就不凡。他通过各类翻译活动见文化、译文化、论文化,旗帜鲜明地提出了其翻译文化观,表达了一名翻译工作者对促进平等文化交流与维护文化多样性的深切关怀。认识许钧的翻译文化观,不仅具有认识当代中国翻译理论家之翻译思想的学术价值,更具有认识改革开放以来中国翻译家精神的时代意义。许钧何以如此关心翻译的文化维度?其翻译文化观有何具体所指?其翻译文化观产生了哪些历史和现实的影响?这些应该是众多想要从许钧身上获取榜样经验及榜样力量的翻译从业者十分关注的问题。

一、许钧关注翻译之文化维度的缘起

翻译观作为个体秉持的对翻译的看法、认识、态度、价值观,其形成是合理性和合目的性的统一,它既受社会历史语境的影响,也是个体根据自身知识背景和实践经验,通过观察和思考,自觉选择的结果。许钧的翻译文化观并非一日而成,更非偶然而就。从其学术历程看,许钧早于1979年就发表了学术论文,探讨的是法语语法新现象,关注的是语言层面的问题。而自20世纪90年代起,许钧开始持续不断地发表翻译文化方面的文章,讨论翻译中的文化因素、文学翻译中的文化关系处理、译者对待异语文化的态度、翻译

1 参见方梦之:《中国译学大辞典》,上海:上海外语教育出版社,2011年,第32页。

2 参见杨仕章:“文化翻译观:翻译诸悖论之统一”,《外语学刊》4(2000):67。

的文化价值、翻译研究的文化观、数字化时代的中国文化译介等诸多主题。这表明，他的研究经历了从文字、文学到文化的视野拓展。自此，翻译的文化维度一直是思考的对象。结合 20 世纪 70 至 90 年代的时代背景以及许钧个人的翻译活动经历，大致可从外部环境与个体经验两个方面解释许钧关注翻译文化维度的原因。

1、对翻译研究范式的反思

20 世纪 70 年代末，许钧受公派至法国留学两年后回国任教。彼时正值西方哲学发生“语言转向”，翻译学者开始向语言学寻求理论资源和方法借鉴。以奈达（Eugene A. Nida）、卡特福德（John Cunnison Catford）、纽马克（Peter Newmark）、乔治·穆南（Georges Mounin）等为代表的西方语言学派翻译理论家的学说，随着改革开放的东风进入中国，对中国的翻译研究产生了极大的影响，将中国翻译学者从传统的、强调体悟和灵感的语文学研究范式中解放出来的同时，也引发了中国译学界对现代语言学的关注，结构主义语言学翻译研究成为了主流范式。

这一范式将翻译学视为语言学的一部分，视语言学理论为翻译研究唯一合法的理论基础，重视以自然科学的模式和方法，去探求语言符号等值转换过程中的规律。这就导致翻译研究偏于文本语言的内部结构，而缺少对文本外部要素的关注。正如有学者所言，研究者“必须把一切情感的考虑、审美的考虑都撇在一边”（邓晓芒 104）去看待事物，结果无法看出对象的合目的性。易言之，用科学主义的简单性原则和还原论方法看待翻译研究，很大程度上会将人的主观情感与审美等因素排除在外，人们凭此很难看到翻译活动中人的存在，以及翻译活动之于社会和历史的意义。

20 世纪后半叶，文化研究在西方兴起，解构主义、现象学、阐释学等思潮迭起。人们开始反思语言学翻译研究的不足，将视野拓展至文本之外的社会文化因素，将不同时期的“价值观、意识形态、体制”（刘军平 394）等因素纳入翻译考察的范围，“力图对诸如翻译者的主观因素、语言转换中的文化移植、影响翻译的文本外因素等语言学途径难以深入分析的问题及翻译历史上的众多翻译现象提供解释”（许钧，“翻译研究之用及其可能的出路” 6），这拓展了人们对翻译活动的认识，增加了人们对复杂翻译现象的理解。

许钧一直都重视文学翻译中的语言问题，但他在肯定语言学范式翻译研究的同时，也对其不足保持着反思的态度。20 世纪 90 年代，许钧对翻译活动中文化因素的关注明显增加。这与西方翻译研究的“文化转向”大致同时发生，不过与之不同的是，许钧关注的并不是如何以文化解构语言，而是如何将翻译中的语言和文化结合起来建构世界。从 1996 年“文字·文学·文化——关于‘文字翻译’与‘文学翻译’”一文可见，许钧不但看到了文学翻译活动对象自下而上三个互相关联的层面——译者所译的文学是“文字的艺术”，也是“文化的一个组成部分”；同时还表达了他对译者处理双语文化态度的见

解——翻译作为文化沟通的中介,要以“不偏不倚的态度”尊重双语文化,其目的关键在于“能否达到交流与沟通”(168-169)。此后的“文化‘差异’与翻译”(1997)、“论翻译活动的三个层面”(1998)等文章都不同程度表达了许钧从文化层面对翻译的认识与思考。

2、对他者文化的感受与体验

近半个世纪以来许钧做翻译、教翻译、研究翻译的历程,是他不断吸收、反思自身的“他者”文化体验,并将之与读者、与业内同行交流的过程。

首先,通过翻译实践体认到翻译的文化桥梁作用。许钧1976年被公派至法国布列塔尼大学留学,留法期间“读了不少法国经典文学作品,还经常到巴黎塞纳河畔的旧书摊去淘书”(许钧,“我的翻译与研究之路”34)。他因此既接触到了莫里哀、伏尔泰、卢梭、巴尔扎克、雨果、左拉、普鲁斯特等经典作家的作品,也关注到了萨特、加缪、尤内斯库、贝克特、勒克莱齐奥、图尼埃等新锐作家。¹1978年回国后,许钧喜遇国内改革开放的“好季节”与外国文学热,欣喜之余产生了向中国读者分享法国文学之美的热切冲动。当时的译者资格门槛、原作理解困难,非但没有阻挡他的翻译热情,反而成为他与出版社、作家等建立联系并搭建桥梁的开端。自1982年出版第一部译作《永别了,疯妈妈》之后,许钧后续翻译出版了《诉讼笔录》《追忆似水年华》(卷四)《不能承受的生命之轻》等三十多部法国文学与社科名著。他通过翻译实践,维系了与出版社、作家等多方之间的良好互动,也获得了读者的喜爱与信任。这些预期内外的种种积极体验,让许钧愈发意识到翻译由文字转换至促进中外交流的重要文化价值。

其次,因研究翻译而深化了对翻译的文化认识。对于许钧而言,选定某个观看翻译的视角,正如选择翻译某位作家和某部作品一样,需要了解与认同。1991年,许钧应邀翻译发表了法国翻译理论家乔治·穆南《翻译的理论问题》(*Les problèmes théoriques de la traduction*, 1976)一书部分章节。穆南虽属语言学派,但显然关注到了翻译活动中的因文化导致的翻译障碍,以及文化问题的类型等²语言外部的的问题。从1997年“文化‘差异’与翻译”一文看,翻译穆南的理论增加了许钧对翻译中文化因素的认识。2002年许钧明确阐述了其“翻译文化观”,其中可见亨利·梅肖尼克(Henri Meschonnic)的“翻译的文化意识”,安德烈·勒菲弗尔(Andre Lefevere)的“翻译研究的文化观”,以及安托瓦纳·贝尔曼(Antoine Berman)的“翻译文化观”对许钧“翻译文化观”形成的理论影响。梅肖尼克“从历史性角度揭示了在翻译活动中文化所占据的重要地位”,勒菲弗尔拓展了翻译研究“语言之外的历史与文化维度”,贝尔曼“把翻译与文化传播结合起来”探讨翻译在文化之间所起

1 参见许钧:“我的翻译与研究之路”,《外语界》5(2018):34。

2 参见乔治·穆南著:“翻译与文化的多样性”,许钧译,《语言与翻译》1(1991):73-77。

的作用“开辟了翻译文化史的研究途径”（许钧，“翻译研究与翻译文化观”222），从理论上确证了许钧个人的翻译体验，并深化、拓展了其翻译经验认识。可以说，许钧选择文化视角，是个体翻译经验与理论的契合。

二、许钧翻译文化观之内涵

从文化维度观翻译，许钧不是第一人，但他有其自身的判断与考量。同翻译文化学派之前早已存在的“文化翻译”¹一样，许钧意识到翻译中文化因素的存在、翻译是一种文化交流；但是与“文化翻译”关注等值转换的方法不同，许钧尤其关心翻译活动主体对待源语与目的语文化的伦理。同翻译研究的文化学派一样，许钧认识到以纯粹语言科学的视角看待翻译问题对历史、社会、人文等外部因素的遮蔽，但是与文化学派注重对翻译历史上意识形态、赞助等外部“操纵”因素的客观描写与解释，倡导阻抗式翻译不同，许钧尤其关注揭示翻译活动对于文化传承与发展的价值。“伦理”与“价值”皆以人为最终指向，显示出许钧翻译文化观对人在翻译活动中在场的高度关心。

1、许钧的翻译文化价值观：文化传承、文明互鉴

翻译有何等价值？答案取决于人们从何种层面思考翻译的目的。如果把翻译存在的目的视为一个由高低级别不等的目的构成的系统，“为国家富强”、“为个人幸福”、“为赚钱、娱人、娱己、搞对象”等²，都是翻译活动体现其于国家、社会或个人价值的合理选项，区别在于价值的高低。作为最早系统论述翻译价值的学者，许钧也曾多次表达自己作为一名译者与原文作者精神契合、与伟大的心灵神交的幸福，但许钧的翻译价值观，着眼点鲜少在于个人。他从翻译的社会价值、文化价值、语言价值、创造价值与历史价值五个方面，详述过翻译的交流、传承、沟通、创造、发展功用³，目光在于国家与人类文明、文化的交流与发展。

（1）语内翻译与文化传承

早在20世纪20年代初，梁启超论及佛经翻译以前的中国古代翻译文学时，将翻译分为两类，一类是“以今翻古”，另一类是“以内翻外”。⁴其所指大致相当于四十多年后雅各布森（Roman Jakobson）提出的语内翻译与语际翻译。此两种区分，恰好揭示了翻译之于一个民族文化发展的时间（纵向）与空间（横向）维度。

以今翻古的语内翻译，在梁启超看来是因为“语言易世而必变”“古书非翻不能读”（梁启超 160），说明他认为语内翻译的价值主要在于帮助下人读懂古书。这大体是在语言层面认识语内翻译的价值。许钧受季羨林中

1 参见刘军平：《西方翻译理论通史》，武汉：武汉大学出版社，2013年，第395页。

2 参见曹明伦：“文本目的——译者的翻译目的——兼评德国功能派的目的论和意大利谚语‘翻译即叛逆’”，《天津外国语学院学报》4（2007）：2。

3 参见许钧：《翻译论》，武汉：湖北教育出版社，2006年，第366-429页。

4 参见梁启超：《佛学研究十八篇》，北京：商务印书馆，2014年，第160页。

国文化长河通过翻译印度、西方得以注水长流之说的启发，提出如下观点：

〔……〕翻译，在某种意义上，则是在不断促进文化的积累与创新。一个民族的文化的发展，不能没有传统，而不同时代对传统的阐释与理解，会赋予传统新的意义与内涵。想一想不同时代对《四书》《五经》的不断“翻译”，不断阐释，我们便可理解，语内翻译是对文化传统的一种丰富；是民族文化得以在时间上不断延续的一种保证。（许钧，“绕不过去的翻译问题” 7）

许钧上述观点是他从文化层面对语内翻译之于民族文化遗产与发展价值的直接表述。许钧与梁启超就语内翻译价值认识的差异，明显源自其对翻译本质的不同认识。如果翻译仅仅是语言转换，今人翻译古书，不过是用今人的语言替换古旧的表述以完整再现古人之原意。当下读者懂了，目的即已达成。许钧认识到的翻译不止于此。在他看来，一代代的译者在理解与表达古书的过程中，必然含有译者各自的视域与见解。古代经书经过世代“今人”的阐释，使得传统得以维系的同时也在后人的新视域、新见解中得以拓新和发展。

（2）语际翻译与文明互鉴

语际翻译之于文明互鉴的价值，古往今来案例不胜枚举。一部人类文明发展史，很大程度上就是一部翻译史。希腊人通过翻译从巴比伦文明中“学到了数学、物理学和哲学，犹太人学到了神学，阿拉伯人学到了建筑学”（刘军平 53）；没有翻译就没有哥特语字母表、亚美尼亚语字母表、格拉哥里字母表、西里尔字母表、克里语字母表的产生¹；影响欧洲文化的圣经“根本就是一部大译书”，“没有翻译就没有基督教”，“同理也就没有佛教”²。

就中国文化而言，梁启超从以内翻外的实践中看到了佛经翻译促使中国“国语实质之扩大”、“语法及文体之变化”、“文学情趣之发展”的作用³，季羨林用注水长流说生动表明了外译中为中国文化输入发展力量的意义⁴。许钧十分认同语际翻译之于中国文化发展的重要价值，与此同时他也明显认识到翻译文化影响的交互性。

2019年纪念五四运动100周年之际，许钧撰写多篇文章表达了翻译之于五四运动、之于中国文化革新的重要意义，并旗帜鲜明地将翻译根本上视为一种本我向他者开放的深层次双向交流，将那种“敢于打开封闭自我，在与‘异’的交流、碰撞与融合中丰富自身的求新的创造精神”（“翻译精神与五四运动” 9）视为翻译精神。这一方面表达了许钧对以内翻外活动促进中国文化革新发

1 参见 Jean Delisle and Judith Woodsworth, *Translators through History* (Revised edition), Amsterdam: John Benjamins, 2012, 3-22.

2 参见 余光中：《余光中谈翻译》，北京：中国对外翻译出版公司，2002年，第148页。

3 参见 梁启超：《佛学研究十八篇》，北京：商务印书馆，2014年，第191-195页。

4 参见 季羨林：“序”，《中国翻译词典》，武汉：湖北教育出版社，1997年，第2页。

展价值的肯定；另一方面也表明许钧从看似“利己”的以内翻外活动中，看到了其延展异语文化生命的价值，看到了任何一种翻译活动文化影响的双向性与交互性。他认为“不同民族语言文化之间的交流，是一种需要。任何一个民族想发展，必须走出封闭的自我（……）在不断碰撞中，甚至冲突中，渐渐相互理解，相互交融。在这个意义上，翻译又是民族文化在空间上的一种拓展，在内涵上的一种丰富”（“绕不过去的翻译问题” 7）。

也正因意识到任何一种语际翻译活动影响的双向性与交互性，许钧面对不少人对当下主动进行的中译外活动之价值与有效性心怀疑虑，他并不怀疑以外翻内活动的价值。许钧肯定了中译外之“中国选择”与“中国阐释”对于构建系统中国文化价值观的基础作用¹，也列举成功的历史经验说明主动外译完全可能“丰富而卓有成效”，能够获得译入语文化读者的肯定，并有力促进中外文化交流。²不过他也提醒人们，语际翻译要“警惕文化霸权与狭隘的文化民族主义”，保持宽阔的视野，避免单向的翻译观和狭隘、急功近利的翻译心理。³

2、许钧的翻译文化伦理观：弘扬翻译精神

如何处理或看待翻译活动中自我和他者文化的关系？这一问题直指翻译活动主体内心遵从的道德与伦理。如果翻译仅仅是语言转换，忠实便是最高且唯一的伦理。不过忠实本身含义多元，在何种层面忠于什么，理解见仁见智。1813年，解释学先驱施莱尔马赫（Friedrich Daniel Ernst Schleiermacher）提出了归化、异化两种翻译策略，并表示他倾向忠于原作特性的异化翻译。⁴19世纪60年代，纽曼（Francis Newman）在认可施氏异化翻译的基础上，突破其民族主义取向，倡导尊重文化差异、遏制文化霸权和民族主义的异化翻译。⁵这些尊重差异的翻译观念在1984年贝尔曼的“翻译伦理”论述中得到重申。贝尔曼认为，系统消除原作差异的译本是糟糕的翻译。⁶他提倡尊重原作异质性的翻译伦理，后续得到了韦努蒂（Lawrence Venuti）等西方翻译学者的响应⁷，也影响了许钧。许钧在前人思想的基础上，凝

1 参见许多、许钧：“中华文化典籍的对外译介与传播——关于《大中华文库》的评价与思考”，《外语教学理论与实践》3（2015）：14。

2 参见许钧：“关于深化中国文学外译研究的几点意见”，《外语与外语教学》6（2021）：69。

3 参见许钧：“中西古今关系之变下的翻译思考”，《中国外语》4（2015）：1。

4 参见刘军平、覃江华：《西方翻译理论名著选读》，武汉：武汉大学出版社，2012年，第611-634页。

5 参见刘军平、覃江华：《西方翻译理论名著选读》，武汉：武汉大学出版社，2012年，第41-45页。

6 参见 A. Berman, *The Experience of the Foreign: Culture and Translation in Romantic Germany*, translated by Stefan Heyvaert, New York: State University of New York Press, 1992, 5.

7 参见刘云虹：“翻译价值观与翻译批评伦理途径的建构——贝尔曼、韦努蒂、皮姆翻译伦理思想辨析”，《中国外语》5（2013）：84。

练并提出出了他不断倡导的“翻译精神”。

(1) 敞开自我，与“异”交流

翻译必然意味着与语言之异、文化、思维、世界之异¹的接触。敞开自我，往往不是翻译之初常见的文化态度。汉代佛经初传，虽有部分汉人信仰，但是汉人正式出家是严令禁止的，为了减轻文化戒备与排斥，佛经翻译常以中土儒家思想比附；16世纪利玛窦（Matteo Ricci）来华传教之初更是进退维谷，一边面对的是视非天主教民族为魔鬼的欧洲人文主义与狭隘亚利安民族主义，另一边还要面对“宁使中国无好历法，不可使中国有西洋人”的中国卫道士。²然而，文化交流一旦产生需求，其力量是强大的。由翻译引领的文化交融、自省与革新，随着门户的敞开会深入每一片文化领地。

许钧依据个人的翻译活动经历，以及他对翻译历史经验的领悟，深刻意识到积极开放自我的重要性，并因此大力提倡本族文化敞开自我，主动与异语文化交流。就个人而言，许钧认为正是积极开放的交流心态，让他得以与出版社、原文作者、译文读者建立了良好的互动关系，产生翻译学术发表的动力，并在中法文化交流中发挥了一名翻译人的桥梁作用；就在中国历史上产生过重要影响的文化人物而言，鲁迅借助翻译吸收新思想、新表达、改造国人思维，赵元任翻译《阿丽思漫游奇境记》锻炼白话文表达能力，王小波创作受王道乾、查良铮译文滋养，叶兆言从傅雷译巴尔扎克作品中窥见汉语表达的奥妙³，无不说明主动敞开自我，译入异语他者丰富和发展本族文化的重要作用。

敞开自我，实际是在充分接纳与认识自我的基础上，对不断发展自我的追求与渴望。许钧十分认同周恩来总理对于中国改革开放表达的观点——敢于向一切国家的长处学习，就是最有自信心和自尊心的表现，这样的民族也一定是能够自强的民族。⁴他撰写多篇文章纪念100多年前的五四运动，均可视为他对中华文化主动拥抱翻译精神的赞扬。因为在他看来，翻译根本就是本我向他者开放，翻译精神就是那种敢于打开封闭自我的开放精神。

(2) 尊重他者，平等对话

翻译人如何对待他者的文化，在许钧看来，“无视”、“轻视”或“仰视”他者，都是需要克服的态度。⁵

他者即意味着他异性，尊重他者就是对文化异质性与多样性的维护。正

1 参见 刘云虹，许钧：“异的考验——关于翻译伦理的对谈”，《外国语（上海外国语大学学报）》2（2016）：71。

2 参见 邓恩：《从利玛窦到汤若望：晚明的耶稣会传教士》，余三乐、石蓉译，上海：上海古籍出版社，2003年。

3 参见 许钧：“在抵抗与考验中拓展新的可能——关于翻译与语言的问题”，《语言战略研究》5（2019）：6。

4 参见 许钧：“我的翻译与研究之路”，《外语界》5（2018）：34-39。

5 参见 许钧：“文化‘差异’与翻译”，《中国比较文学》1（1997）：69。

如前文所述, 敞开自我往往不是翻译之初常见的文化态度, 同样的, 减少甚至消除他异性是双语接触初期翻译活动中的常态选择。两晋时期佛教领袖道安、慧远等“用王弼、何晏等人‘贵无’学派的思想体系去解释般若”(任继愈 12), 是以格义的方式削减佛经思想的他异性; 16 世纪利玛窦选择事先翻译科学知识以吸引中国进步知识分子, 是以翻译选材缓解天主教在中国接受的异质程度; 19 世纪初马礼逊(Robert Morrison)、米怜(William Milne)努力学习中文完成汉译《圣经》, 是以逆向翻译消除《圣经》在中国接受的语言异质性。直到施莱尔马赫提出倾向异化翻译, 本雅明(Walter Benjamin)视留存异质性的翻译为语言与生命的救赎¹, 贝尔曼视消除他异性的翻译为违背伦理的糟糕翻译, 韦努蒂将异化翻译视作抵抗文化霸权的手段, 人们才逐渐反思消除他异性的翻译对原作语言及文化施加的“暴力”以及相应造成的语言文化损失。

许钧认为, 接受者文化和语言对外来文化和语言的异质性表现出“反抗”或“冲突”是必须承认的事实。如何对待他异性, 需要人们对“异”的价值有充分的认识, 对输入与输出异质文化保持平等互惠的态度。首先, 从译入的角度看, 人们需要认识到, 翻译吸收异质文化, “不是为了扼杀民族文化”, 吸收异质表达方法, “不是为了丧失母语的纯洁与本色”, 而是在保持自我立场的前提下丰富、发展自我; 从输出的角度看, 同样需要认识到, 不能为译入语文化提供异质的东西意味着本身交流价值不高, 难以接受译入语文化的考验。其次, 没有平等互惠的翻译态度, 同样不利于文化交流。罔顾对方需求盲目野蛮进行“侵犯”是许钧不赞成的态度, “在平等的基础上, 互通有无, 达到互利”是他认为翻译在多元文化语境下应当遵守的原则。²在许钧看来, 翻译旨在构建的, 应当是一种“一种亲密无间、相互对等、彼此信赖、开放自在的”自我与他者关系。³

作为一名翻译人, 许钧也是他自身倡导原则的践行者。中外文化如何能够经由翻译进行平等互惠的交流, 在许钧的著述以及个人实践活动中有着极为丰富和生动的体现。他先后翻译出版了《诉讼笔录》《追忆似水年华》(卷四)《不能承受的生命之轻》等三十多部法国文学与社科名著, 通过翻译把优秀的法国作品介绍给中国读者, 丰富中国读者对文学的认识的同时, 也在时空上拓展了法国文学的生命。与此同时, 他也密切关注中华典籍与中国文学的外译, 为中译外的价值认识与有效性实现路径提供思想指引。此外, 许钧还积极组织勒克莱齐奥、莫言、毕飞宇、余华、方方等中法知名作家进行交流, 让中法作家增进对彼此了解的基础上, 进行平等的交流与对话。

1 参见 刘军平:《西方翻译理论通史》, 武汉: 武汉大学出版社, 2009 年, 第 257-258 页。

2 参见 许钧, “尊重、交流与沟通——多元文化语境下的翻译”, 《中国比较文学》3 (2001): 87-88。

3 参见 许钧, “文化‘差异’与翻译”, 《中国比较文学》1 (1997): 73。

三、许钧翻译文化观的意义

许钧从文化交流与文明互鉴的角度表达了其翻译文化价值观，从翻译活动应当保持的自我与他者文化态度表明了其翻译文化伦理观，反映出他对翻译活动之中“人”的密切关心——以人的文化为翻译活动的最高目的，关注翻译人在文化活动中能够发挥的作用。这一翻译观念至少具备如下两大方面的价值：

第一，提升社会对翻译活动本质与价值的认识。

尽管翻译活动在人类文明发展史上，在现代社会各个学科知识的生发史上，在人们生活的方方面面，都起到举足轻重的推动作用；没有对翻译活动进行过严肃思考和深入认识的业外甚至业内人，对翻译存在的价值是认识不清的。当下翻译学科地位大幅提升、翻译实践与研究成果受到越来越多的关注、翻译人才队伍不断壮大，无疑是一群对翻译本质与价值有着深刻认识的人奔走争取的结果。

纵观翻译实践历史绵长，译者、译作、翻译人才培养，连同翻译研究一起，长期以来难以得到社会的普遍重视。其中的一个重要原因，在于社会对翻译本质的认识停留在语言对等转换的层面。将语言对等转换当作翻译本质，人们自然会生成诸如“懂外语就会做翻译”“译者不过是语言转换的工具”等过简的翻译认识，翻译之功用就只在满足一时的语言转换之需。

许钧秉持文化交流的翻译本质观，他关注语内翻译之于民族文化古今传承的功能，语际翻译之于不同文化之间互相学习借鉴的功能，将人类文化的承继与发展视为翻译活动的最高目的。许钧不仅对此翻译文化价值深信不疑，同时也意识到将大众的翻译价值认识从忠实语言转换提升到了人类文化传承与发展高度的重要意义。为了帮助更多的翻译业内外人士在更高层面、更为宽阔的视野上认识翻译的本质与价值，许钧通过学术出版与发表、讲座等多种方式，论述翻译的本质及价值，揭示历史上著名翻译家、翻译活动的文化功用，呼吁社会对译作价值的认可，分享自己的翻译文化活动体验，引导大众关注生活中的翻译存在。《绕不过去的翻译问题》（2001）《翻译价值简论》（2004）《关于外语学科翻译成果认定的几个问题》（2017）《翻译是历史的奇遇——我译法国文学》（2017）《翻译的定位与翻译价值的把握——关于翻译价值的对谈》（2017）《文学翻译、文化交流与学术研究的互动——以我和勒克莱齐奥的交往为例》（2018）《翻译精神与五四运动——试论翻译之于五四运动的意义》（2019）等，都是许钧上述实践与思想历程的记录，这些活动与成果也在业内外产生了显著影响。

第二，引导翻译从业者对自身翻译行为目的与价值发挥的认识。

在不少翻译从业人员在翻译工具与人工智能技术发展冲击之下倍感迷茫的时代，许钧的翻译文化价值观及伦理观为翻译从业者建立了翻译活动的目

标追求，也为翻译人如何认识并发挥人在翻译活动中的价值指明了方向。

翻译的目的，如前所述有高低之分。余光中按照境界论，说翻译“高，可以影响一国之文化。低，可以赢得一笔稿费”（147）。译者为生存计，通过翻译赚取稿费，本是天经地义。但是翻译目的如果仅停留在较低层次，面临的问题是多重的。一方面，我们很难想象仅为赚取稿费的翻译主体会突破文字转换层面，主动去思考并引人关注翻译选择关涉的社会与文化影响问题；另一方面，人类已经开发出多样的翻译工具，“将一些原本需要译者通过学习而内化的能力外化到技术设备之上”（蓝红军 69），翻译如果仅仅依靠文字转换彰显价值，生存只会愈发被动，体现价值的空间只会越来越小。

许钧将翻译的作用定位在“影响一国之文化”，为翻译从业者树立了崇高的奋斗目标。他并不排斥翻译技术，但坚信人的“创造性的思考”与“对未知的探索”不可替代。¹这实际在提醒译者在实践主体之外，关注自身作为“精神主体”的身份。树立崇高的翻译目标，译者才能将自身置于翻译活动的中心，注重自身的“能动性、自主性和创造性”，将自己“看作可以能动地作用于外在于人的语言和文本世界的人”，可以“通过翻译影响和改造他人的思想、实现自我精神追求的精神主体”，“可以主动地作用于他人和自我内在精神世界的人”。²许钧指出，“当翻译被置于文化的视野之下进行重新审视时，有关翻译本质、翻译目的与任务、翻译标准与策略、影响翻译的因素、翻译的历史地位与作用等许多长期以来争论不休的问题得以在新的认识层面展开，可望有所突破，翻译历史上一些重要的历史现象也有望得到科学的解释”（“翻译研究与翻译文化观”223）。这也为从事翻译实践、翻译批评、翻译研究、翻译教学的广大翻译从业人员如何在翻译活动中发挥主体价值提供启发：

（1）对于翻译实践而言，翻译价值立场、翻译目的、翻译方向、翻译选材、翻译人员、翻译策略、翻译方法、译本模态、承载媒介、出版机构等等，存在多样选择。翻译主体一旦对之形成自觉充分的认识，就能够在翻译活动中游刃有余地发挥自身的主导作用，最大程度追求翻译活动价值的实现。

（2）对于翻译批评与翻译研究而言，可以跳出语言对等转换与翻译史实罗列层面，对探讨对象就上述方面做出了何种选择，内外部的影响因素为何，其选择产生了怎样的影响，在文本内外部开展更多层次、更全维度的评判与探究。

（3）对于翻译教学而言，可以帮助翻译学习者树立崇高的翻译文化价值观与伦理观，在更高层面认识翻译活动的本质与价值、把握人与工具的关系、了解翻译能力提升的方面与途径，明确未来发展的方向。

1 参见 许钧：“数字化时代中华文化译介与创新——从翻译的创造性谈起”，《翻译研究》2（2023）：2。

2 参见 许钧：“数字化时代中华文化译介与创新——从翻译的创造性谈起”，《翻译研究》2（2023）：2。

四、结语

翻译是一项实践性极强的人类语言活动。然而没有明确思想观念指导的翻译实践是盲目的。许钧关心翻译之微观的语言、技巧，却不止步于此；关注翻译的文化层面但无意于“操纵”“阻抗”和“暴力”。他在由技至道、由文本至文化的翻译实践与研究之路上践行并倡导其翻译文化价值与伦理观念。在翻译的文化价值上，许钧强调语内翻译之于民族文化遗产与发展的价值，语际翻译之于人类文明文化互鉴的价值；在翻译文化伦理方面，许钧倡导各族文化敞开自我，主动与“异”交流，主张翻译活动主体尊重翻译中所遇文化的他异性，以平等的态度与异语文化对话。许钧的翻译文化观以人类文化的传承与发展为最高目的、密切关注人在翻译活动中的精神主体在场，不但能够提升社会对翻译价值的普遍认识，为翻译实践、翻译批评、翻译研究、翻译教学等从业人员树立了崇高的理想，还为翻译从业者在翻译技术发展迅猛的当下如何发挥自身的翻译主体价值指明出路。

Works Cited

- Berman, Antoine. *The Experience of the Foreign: Culture and Translation in Romantic Germany*, translated by Stefan Heyvaert. New York: State U of New York P, 1992.
- 曹明伦：“文本目的——译者的翻译目的——兼评德国功能派的目的论和意大利谚语‘翻译即叛逆’”，《天津外国语学院学报》4（2007）：1-5。
- [Cao Minglun. “Textual Purpose Is Translator’s Fundamental Purpose: On Skopos Theory and Italian Epigram ‘Traduttore, traditore’.” *Journal of Tianjin Foreign Studies University* 4 (2007): 1-5.]
- Delisle, Jean and Judith Woodsworth. *Translators through History* (Revised edition). Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins, 2012.
- 邓晓芒：《康德〈判断力批判〉释义》。北京：生活·读书·新知三联书店，2008年。
- [Deng Xiaomang. *Paraphrase on Kant’s Criticism of the Judgment*. Beijing: SDX Joint Publishing Company, 2008.]
- 邓恩：《从利玛窦到汤若望：晚明的耶稣会传教士》，余三乐、石蓉译。上海：上海古籍出版社，2003年。
- [Dunne, Geroge. *Generation of Giants: The Story of the Jesuits in China in the Last Decades of the Ming Dynasty*, translated by Yu Sanle and Shi Rong. Shanghai: Shanghai Classics Publishing House, 2003.]
- 方梦之：《中国译学大辞典》。上海：上海外语教育出版社，2011年。
- [Fang Mengzhi. *A Dictionary of Translation Studies in China*. Shanghai: Shanghai Foreign Language Education Press, 2011.]
- 季羨林：“序”，《中国翻译词典》。武汉：湖北教育出版社，1997年，第2页。
- [Ji Xianlin. “Preface.” *A Companion for Chinese Translators*. Wuhan: Hubei Education Press, 1997.]

蓝红军：“译者之为：构建翻译的精神世界——《傅雷翻译研究》述评”，《中国翻译》1（2017）：68-73。

[Lan Hongjun. “A review of Fu Lei’s Translation Studies.” *Chinese Translators Journal* 1 (2017): 68-73.]

梁启超：《佛学研究十八篇》。北京：商务印书馆，2014年。

[Liang Qichao. *Eighteen Chapters on Buddhist Studies*. Beijing: The Commercial Press, 2014.]

刘军平：《西方翻译理论通史》。武汉：武汉大学出版社，2009年。

[Liu Junping. *A General History of Western Translation Theory*. Wuhan: Wuhan UP, 2009.]

刘军平、覃江华：《西方翻译理论名著选读》。武汉：武汉大学出版社，2012年。

[Liu Junping and Qin Jianghua. *An Anthology of Western Translation Theory*. Wuhan: Wuhan UP, 2012.]

刘云虹：“翻译价值观与翻译批评伦理途径的建构——贝尔曼、韦努蒂、皮姆翻译伦理思想辨析”，《中国外语》5（2013）：83-88+94。

[Liu Yunhong. “Translation Values and Construction of Ethical Approach to Translation Criticism Studies: Identification of Berman’s, Venuti’s and Pym’s Thoughts on Translation Ethics.” *Foreign Languages in China* 5 (2013): 83-88+94.]

刘云虹、许钧：“异的考验——关于翻译伦理的对谈”，《外国语》2（2016）：70-77。

[Liu Yunhong and Xu Jun. “The Experience of the Foreign: An Interview on Translation Ethics.” *Journal of Foreign Languages* 2 (2016): 70-77.]

乔治·穆南：“翻译与文化的多样性”，许钧译。《语言与翻译》4（1991）：73-77。

[Moonen, George. “Translation and Cultural Diversity.” *Language and Translation* 4 (1991): 73-77.]

任继愈：《汉唐佛教思想论集》。北京：人民出版社，1973年。

[Ren Jiyu. *Collections of Buddhist Thoughts in Han and Tang Dynasties*. Beijing: People’s Publishing House, 1973.]

许钧：“文化“差异”与翻译”，《中国比较文学》1（1997）：67-78。

[Xu Jun. “Cultural Difference and Translation.” *Comparative Literature in China* 1 (1997): 67-78.]

——：“在抵抗与考验中拓展新的可能——关于翻译与语言的问题”，《语言战略研究》5（2019）：5-6。

[—, “Exploiting New Possibilities in Resistance and Test: Questions about Translation and Language.” *Chinese Journal of Language Policy and Planning* 5 (2019): 5-6.]

——：“绕不过去的翻译问题”，李伟国主编，《辞海新知7》。上海：上海辞书出版社，2001年，第2-10页。

[—, “The inescapable translation problems,” edited by Li Weiguo. *Cihai Xinzhishi* 7. Shanghai: Shanghai Lexicographic Publishing House, 2001. 2-10.]

——：“我的翻译与研究之路”，《外语界》5（2018）：34-39。

[—, “My Experience of Translation and Academic Research.” *Foreign Language World* 5 (2018): 34-39.]

- : “中西古今关系之变下的翻译思考”, 《中国外语》4 (2015): 1+25.
- [—: “Reflections on Translation in the Evolving Relationships between China and the West throughout History.” *Foreign Languages in China* 4 (2015): 1+25.]
- : “文字·文学·文化——关于‘文字翻译’与‘文学翻译’”, 《南京大学学报》(哲学·人文科学·社会科学版) 1 (1996): 168-172.
- [—: “Text, Literature and Culture: on ‘Text Translation’ and ‘Literary Translation’.” *Journal of Nanjing University (Philosophy, Humanities and Social Sciences)* 1 (1996): 168-172.]
- : 《翻译论》。武汉: 湖北教育出版社, 2006 年。
- [—: *On Translation*. Wuhan: Hubei Education Press, 2006.]
- : “尊重、交流与沟通——多元文化语境下的翻译”, 《中国比较文学》3 (2001): 82-92.
- [—: “Respect, Exchange, and Communication: Translation in the Context of Multiculturalism.” *Comparative Literature in China* 3 (2001): 82-92.]
- : “数字化时代中华文化译介与创新——从翻译的创造性谈起”, 《翻译研究》2 (2023): 1-7.
- [—: “Translation and Innovation of Chinese Culture in the Digital Era: On Creativity of Translation.” *Translation Research* 2 (2023): 1-7.]
- : “翻译精神与五四运动——试论翻译之于五四运动的意义”, 《中国翻译》3 (2015): 5-12+188.
- [—: “Translation as a Spiritual Pursuit during China’s May Fourth Movement.” *Chinese Translators Journal* 3 (2015): 5-12+188.]
- : “翻译研究之用及其可能的出路”, 《中国翻译》1 (2012): 5-12+122.
- [—: “Translation Studies in China: Its Functions and A Possible Direction for Its Further Development.” *Chinese Translators Journal* 1 (2012): 5-12+122.]
- : “翻译研究与翻译文化观”, 《南京大学学报》(哲学·人文科学·社会科学版) 3 (2002): 219-226.
- [—: “The Study of Translation and Its Cultural Perspective.” *Journal of Nanjing University (Philosophy, Humanities and Social Sciences)* 3 (2002): 219-226.]
- 许多、许钧: “中华文化典籍的对外译介与传播——关于《大中华文库》的评价与思考”, 《外语教学理论与实践》3 (2015): 13-17+94.
- [Xu Duo and Xu Jun. “Translation and Dissemination of Chinese Classics: on the ‘Library of Chinese Classics’.” *Foreign Language Learning Theory and Practice* 3 (2015): 13-17+94.]
- 杨仕章: “文化翻译观: 翻译诸悖论之统一”, 《外语学刊》4 (2000): 66-70.
- [Yang Shizhang. “Views on Cultural Translation: Unity of Paradoxes in Translation.” *Foreign Language Research* 4 (2000): 66-70.]
- 余光中: 《余光中谈翻译》。北京: 中国对外翻译出版公司, 2002 年。
- [Yu Guangzhong. *Yu Guangzhong Talks About Translation*. Beijing: China Translation and Publishing Corporation, 2002.]

传统的继承与发扬——许钧的文学翻译研究

On Inheritance and Development of Tradition:

Xu Jun's Literary Translation Studies

宋学智 (Song Xuezhi)

内容摘要: 在以文学“走出去”为先导的文化“走出去”的新的翻译时代，文学翻译活动呈现出从未有的重要性。许钧重视文学翻译理论与实践的结合，创新翻译理论，引导翻译实践；执著于翻译的基本问题和本质特征的科学之问和时代之问，取得了不凡的成就。对其文学翻译实践与理论研究的成功之路做一梳理，尝试描述一个与时代同呼吸，具有责任感、使命感和人文情怀的翻译精神主体，期望有助于我国的翻译活动更明确有效、更高质量地服务国家的文化发展。

关键词: 文学翻译；许钧；理论与实践；请进来；走出去

作者简介: 宋学智，吉林外国语大学西方语学院教授，主要研究领域为翻译学与法国文学。

Title: On Inheritance and Development of Tradition: Xu Jun's Literary Translation Studies

Abstract: In the new era, the “going global” of Chinese literature serves as a major force in the promotion of Chinese culture “going global,” elevating the significance of literary translation to an unprecedented level. Xu Jun attaches great importance to the integrity of theory and practice of literary translation, carries out theoretical innovation to guide translation practices, and explores the fundamental questions and essential features of translation in a scientific and contemporary manner, achieving remarkable success. This paper aims at summarizing the successful experiences of his practices and theoretical studies in literary translation, drawing the outline of a great translator with a strong sense of responsibility, mission and humanistic sentiment who advances with the times, providing useful guidance for domestic translation practices, and serving the cultural development of China more clearly, effectively and with higher quality.

Keywords: literary translation; Xu Jun; theory and practice; “bring in”; “going global”

Author: Song Xuezhi, Ph.D., is Professor at the School of Western Languages,

Jilin International Studies University (Jilin 130117, China). His major research fields include translation studies and French literature (Email: songxzhi@sina.com).

法国文学汉译在中国有着悠久的优良传统,在老一辈翻译家中,傅雷是杰出的代表,为传递西方优秀的精神文化遗产做出巨大贡献。改革开放以来,新一代翻译家砥砺前行,成长壮大。许钧正是其中一位,他以傅雷为楷模,学习他的翻译作品,研究他的翻译思想。如今,无论在文学翻译实践层面,还是在文学翻译理论层面,许钧都取得了不凡的成就,因为他已将中国翻译事业的发展作为自己生命的追求,一如当年的傅雷,把自己的艺术追求与生命追求结合起来,通过翻译活动呈现出他的赤子之心。从以往的以“翻译世界”为主要方向到今天规模性增加“翻译中国”的新方向,翻译在我国的文化强国和对外发展上面,显示出前所未有的重要地位和重大作用。然而当下,我们的翻译实践中还存在着急功近利、浮躁等现象,翻译理论研究中 also 存在着种种困惑、盲从等倾向,不利于翻译事业的健康发展。为了让我国的翻译活动更明确有效、更高质量地服务国家的文化发展,本文将对许钧的文学翻译实践与理论研究的成功之路做一梳理,探讨他如何突破语言的边界,让文本的生命在异域生成、拓展;如何在一步一步提高自己对翻译的认识的同时,越来越加深自己对翻译理论的研究;如何创新翻译理论,引导翻译实践;尝试描述出从改革开放到文化“走出去”这一路走来的,与国家文化建设同呼吸共命运的,具有强烈责任感、使命感和满满人文情怀的翻译精神主体。

一、从文学翻译实践到文学翻译理论

(一) 从高质量的翻译实践起步

谈许钧的文学翻译研究,不可不提他的文学翻译实践,因为他的文学翻译实践是他在翻译领域取得骄人业绩的基础。1976年,22岁的许钧到法国留学深造,“被法国语言文学的美深深吸引”,每每遇到好的小说,非一口气读完不可。两年后回国,“面对当时涌动的外国文学阅读潮(……),内心有一种莫名的冲动,特别想把自己喜欢的法国当代文学作品翻译出来,介绍给国人”(《关于翻译的新思考》75)。许钧说:“就是这种想要分享的原始冲动(……),让我选择了翻译”(《翻译与翻译研究》248)。1982年,许钧合译的《永别了,疯妈妈》出版,《人民日报》《新华日报》《外国文学研究》《当代外国文学》等主流媒体和重要的学术刊物相继发表评论文章。此后,许钧在翻译道路上一发不可收,翻译出波伏娃的《名士风流》、巴尔扎克的《邦斯舅舅》和《贝姨》、雨果的《海上劳工》、普鲁斯特的《追忆似水年华》(卷四)、图尼埃的《桤木王》、勒克莱齐奥的《沙漠的女儿》和《诉讼笔录》、昆德拉的《不能承受的生命之轻》等优秀作品,至今独立或合作翻译出版了40余部,愈800万字。许钧说:“我爱翻译(……)当我将倾注着我的赤诚的

爱的译作呈现在中国读者面前的时候,我感到幸福,也感到负疚,感到害怕。我总是带着一种负罪感,担心由于自己的无能、失误与笨拙,表现不出法国文学的气质与风采,得不到中国读者的青睐”(《批评与阐释》240)。这种诚惶诚恐的担心反映了译者在忠诚和热情之外对翻译工作的责任心,促使这位有心人自觉琢磨起如何解决翻译中遇到的难题,再提高翻译的质量。

(二) 从形而下到形而上的探索

在翻译实践过程中,许钧“遇到了许多难以想象的障碍和困难”(《翻译论》1),既有理解层面的问题,也有表达层面的问题。作为一个热爱翻译,以信为本,追求品质的人,他选择直面问题,寻求答案。对于前者,一些在世的作者如勒克莱齐奥、艾田蒲、博达尔等都是他请教的对象;关于后者,他一方面靠自己摸索,通过对翻译的作品中问题、难点的分类、分析、归纳与总结,写出了“蕴含义的理解与翻译”、“词义的理解与运用”、“简论不同语言符号系统的转换基础”等文;另一方面,他有目的地去阅读名家谈翻译的文章,在“傅雷、许渊冲等老一辈翻译家论翻译的文章的启发影响下”(《关于翻译的新思考》77),通过学习、借鉴、揣摩,写出了“傅雷译文风格得失谈”、“《红与黑》汉译漫评”等文。虽然早期的研究如他所说“大都属于对一些小的具体问题的分析与研究,往往处于整理与归纳的层次”,“沿用的差不多是语言研究的那种方法”(《谈译论学录》199、194),但成功地解决了“技”的层面的转换问题,开始从翻译小“道”上对翻译实践做出突破性的研究探索。《追忆似水年华》是一部开意识流先河的巨著,对于这部“天书”一样难译的传世之作,两年多时间,许钧也才翻译了20多万字,但却让不畏挑战、勇于攀登的他,在圆满交卷后,又发表了“句子与翻译”、“形象与翻译”、“风格与翻译”等系列论文,渐渐让他开始“全面地思考文学翻译当中的一些基本问题”(《翻译论》11)。

作为一个要毕生从事翻译的人,许钧充分认识到翻译活动的复杂性,不会仅仅限于翻译技巧的探讨。他有意识地边译边学,边学边思。他敏锐地注意到,“人们在翻译理论的研究中缺乏层次性的观点”,往往造成“众说纷纭,各持一理”,“影响了对问题的深入研究”。他受严复的“信达雅”三难说和皮埃尔·吉罗的(Pierre Giraud)《符号学》中对语言符号的三分法即逻辑符号、语义符号和审美符号的启示,“明确地提出了翻译的思维层次、语义层次和美学层次”,最后指出:“如果说翻译有什么标准的话,那就是,成功的翻译不可能在一个层次完成,它应该是各个必要层次和谐统一的产物”。他说:谈层次的目的在于,“在理论上为认识翻译活动的本质与其活动规律提供一个新的视角;在实践上,要求译者遵循翻译活动的规律,克服不分层次、顾此失彼的倾向,避免翻译活动的盲目性”(《文学翻译批评研究》1-11)。而翻译活动中,与盲目性同时存在的还有随意性。许钧认为,“文学翻译之大忌,就是不吃透原著精神,不捕捉其神韵,而掺入过多的主观因素,‘随意’

再创作”（《文学翻译批评研究》14）。盲目性和随意性都是给原本就争论不休的翻译标准又带来新的干扰，容易导向“主观生造、乱造、硬造”（《文学翻译批评研究》23）。为此，不断思考与探索的许钧不久又撰写了《文学翻译再创造的度》，指出文学翻译再创造涉及四大方面即原作形式因素价值的再现、文化因素价值的移植、文学形象的再创造和语言内部意义的传达，同时提出再创造应处理好四个关系即积极与消极、整体与局部、创新与规范以及客观与主观的关系。¹文章让我们对难以把握精准的再创造的“度”，有了一些切实可靠的抓手和切实可循的路径，在理论上，为文学翻译的再创造活动，提供了重要的依据。

许钧在翻译实践的过程中，一面继续破解翻译“小道”上“技”的问题，一面也在通往翻译的“大道”上不断摸索和思考。1989年发表的《论翻译的层面》从翻译的意愿层面、现实层面和道德层面探讨了“要怎么译”、“能怎么译”和“该怎么译”三个制约翻译主体的因素，既表现出一个有责任感的译者对翻译行为的自我反思，也旨在“帮助翻译主体在翻译中清醒地认识、把握好可能面对的各种关系与因素”（《历史的奇遇》3），告诉我们翻译活动应该是翻译主体所进行的“一种目的十分明确的实践活动”。他进而道：“如果说层次论是自翻译的基础由下而上（……）对翻译活动进行内部的、纵向的思考，那么对翻译活动的三个层面的探索则由内部转向外部”，在超越语言的层面，“对翻译活动的动态过程进行了宏观的考察”（《翻译论》4）与具体的分析。“客观地说，对翻译层次的思考及其主要问题的研究，是我比较系统地探索翻译理论问题的一个起点和尝试”，而“通过对翻译三个层面的研究，无论是对翻译本质的认识，还是对影响翻译的各种因素的了解，都有了进一步的深入”（《谈译论学录》201-202）。

（三）开启全面、系统的著书立说

许钧在回顾自己的翻译研究经历时说，自己起初的研究工作围绕一些实实在在的小问题，实属“小道”，“对一些重大的理论问题缺乏总体的把握和深层的思考”。因此，他自觉努力、勤奋专研。他注意到当时外国文学名著复译潮中出现的问题，“发现《红与黑》的汉译问题非常具有典型的意义”（《谈译论学录》199-200），便于1995年积极发起、组织并亲自参与了持续半年的有关《红与黑》汉译的全国大讨论。对《红与黑》有代表性的几个译本进行比较与研究，对文学翻译的一些具有共性的基本问题进行探讨，包括“名著复译”、“等值与再创造”、“异化与归化的本土考验”、“直译与意译”等内容。面对当时一系列重要问题的百家争鸣，许钧也积极回应，重点观照。相关研究文章和重要的讨论材料最终形成许钧主编的《文字·文学·文化——〈红与黑〉汉译研究》出版。正如作家苏童在书中所说，“其意义远远超过翻译讨论本身”（273），为澄清文学翻译的一些

1 参见许钧：《文学翻译批评研究》，南京：译林出版社，1992年，第14-23页。

基本问题，探索文学翻译的成功之路，提供了重要参考，也使许钧对一些重大的现实问题和基础的理论难题进行了深入的思考和有创造性的研究，对翻译理论之“道”的认识渐渐有了总体的把握，思考又进了一程。

许钧治学严谨、目标明确。即便《红与黑》汉译大讨论取得成功，超过预期，如方平所说，“将以它丰富的意义和深远的影响在未来的文学翻译史册中得到肯定”（《文字·文学·文化》3），他仍觉得，若想要“就翻译活动做一整体的思考与研究”，还是存在“学术准备不足”、“资料欠缺”（《翻译论》313）等问题。于是，他申请了国家教委博士点基金重点项目“文学翻译基本问题研究”。1998年起，他就“文学翻译的一些基本问题，有针对性地与国内译坛的一些卓有成就的著名翻译家，通过对谈的方式进行探讨，让各位翻译家结合自己丰富的翻译实践，畅谈各自对文学翻译的独到见解和体会（……）。在对谈交流的基础上，对翻译家们的翻译经验、体会进行了梳理。（……）对谈与梳理的过程，也是一个从经验体会向理论思考发展，传统的翻译思考不断得到丰富与创新的理论升华过程”（《文学翻译的理论与实践》2）。项目成果最终形成许钧等著的《文学翻译的理论与实践——翻译对话录》出版。这项成果“可以说是对老一辈文学翻译家的成果进行抢救性的整理和研究，是对中国翻译实践和翻译理论的一种探索性研究”（《翻译论》314），既具有重要实践指导价值，也更具有重要的理论价值，因为它给中国文学翻译理论的系统、科学研究提供了可靠的依据，指出一条求新务实的发展路径。该书被列入中华学术外译项目，其英译本于2020年由Routledge出版社出版。

许钧在翻译探索的道路上取得了一个又一个突破性的成就后，还是认为，凭当时自己的理论素养，难以展开深入研究。于是，他又申请获批了教育部课题“外国翻译理论研究”的立项，在蔡毅、郭建中、廖七一教授支持与合作下，经过几年的戮力攻关，出版了“当代西方翻译理论研究”丛书，有《当代苏联翻译理论》《当代美国翻译理论》《当代英国翻译理论》以及许钧亲自挂帅的《当代法国法语理论》。这套丛书让他对国外近几十年来的翻译研究状况，又有了充分了解和把握。2003年，许钧推出理论力作《翻译论》，从纵向看，它对中国传统翻译活动中的翻译经验、翻译思想和老一辈翻译名家的精辟见解做了认真的梳理总结，提炼升华；从横向看，它对国外近几十年来的译学探索成果和主要翻译学派的前沿观点进行了理性研究和科学借鉴，因而才在《翻译论》中形成自己发扬光大的翻译新论。“书中探讨每一个问题时，许钧都会看似信手拈来地把古今中外相关的具有代表性的论点加以引述和点评，最后亮出自己的思考和观点，从中可看出许钧对翻译这一对象思考的深度”（《批评与阐释》134）。专著集中探讨了七大方面的问题，包括翻译本质论、翻译过程论、翻译意义论、翻译因素论、翻译矛盾论、翻译主体论和翻译价值与批判论。作者“从对翻译的语言层面的研究，到把翻译置放在社会、文化的大背景下，用历史发展的目光去加以审视”（《谈

译论学录》202），但探讨的内容主要还是围绕着文学翻译，只是站在更高的层面，立足更大的范畴，从更多的视角和更多的维度，来研究探讨文学翻译的本质与价值、目的与使命及其核心与机制。这是许钧“对翻译进行的一次具有尝试性的整体思考、系统梳理与学术阐发”（《关于翻译的新思考》80），是其“二三十年来从事翻译活动，包括翻译实践与理论研究的心血结晶”（《谈译论学录》202）。这样一部已经达到“拨云见日的境界”的研究力作，为中国文学翻译理论的建设与发展做出了重要贡献。

二、文学翻译的理论拓展与深入思考

（一）从译介研究到翻译家研究

《翻译论》代表了许钧译学理论探索的重大成就，但对于一个把翻译活动作为毕生追求的学者来说，绝不等于给翻译研究画上了最终的句号，相反，成为他前行的新起点。他继续在不同层面探索翻译之道。2007年出版的《20世纪法国文学在中国的译介与接受》从某种意义上说，也是对《翻译论》中“翻译过程论”的拓展，因为这部专著突破了我们传统翻译过程的狭窄的认知，把传统的单动笔翻译的过程，扩大到包含了翻译的静态结果译本的动态传播与接受纳入研究范围的现代认知。该研究专著不仅承继了一般的法国文学翻译史研究的内涵，也通过作品之选择、译介之影响与制约因素、“翻译文学对中国当代文学观念及作家创作”产生作用等“新视野”和“新内容”，给翻译研究打开了新思路，带来“新的进展”，凸显出“独特意义与全新价值”，做到了“继承与创新统一”（《批评与阐释》151-152）。作者站在翻译史的高度，融个案分析与总体把握于一炉，对20世纪法国文学在中国遭遇的种种“异”的考研进行了发掘与整理，“以发展的眼光，对20世纪法国文学在中国的译介与接受的得与失，经验与教训进行了客观的分析和评价，为法国文学在我国的进一步译介、传播和研究，拓展了新的思考空间”（《批评与阐释》159-161）。

2016年出版的《傅雷翻译研究》也是对《翻译论》中“翻译主体论”的又一重要拓展。许钧说：“傅雷的生命是永恒的，一方面源于傅雷的精神伟力，另一方面则源于洋洋大观的傅译作品”（4）。专著从实践主体和精神主体双重维度，深入探讨傅雷璀璨的翻译世界和其高品格的精神世界，揭示了在翻译家傅雷身上，翻译精神是一种“理想精神”、“拯救精神”、“求真精神”和“艺术精神”（《批评与阐释》189-191）。傅雷通过翻译活动中的选择、定夺、再现等译者行为，把自己的艺术追求与精神追求叠合交融，“不仅为我们展现了傅雷的翻译精神世界”，揭示了傅雷的翻译精神、翻译思想、人文情怀和生命价值，“更为重要的是，让我们认识到通过翻译构建人类的精神世界才是翻译具有人文价值的标志”（《批评与阐释》193）。该著着力于傅雷翻译研究的学术空白处，在明确的学术方向上做了一次前所未有的系统开拓，在翻译家傅雷丰满的精神世界里深挖翻译主体，指出了译者行为背后值得研究

和探索的价值所在,获得了教育部第八届高等学校科学研究优秀成果一等奖。

(二) 从翻译原则到翻译语言

许钧一贯秉承“以信为本、求真求美”的翻译原则。据笔者手头资料看,仅在2004-2021年间,许钧在自己的论文中、演讲报告中以及他人的采访或评论引文中,就不下十次地强调过这一翻译原则,因为时下的翻译实践中也出现了美而不忠的翻译倾向,需要引起关注。在他看来,“评判一个翻译好与不好,最重要的不仅要看他(译者)对词汇的选择,美还是不美,丰富还是不丰富,还要看他对原著的理解是否到位。原著词语华丽,还它华丽;原著词语简约,还它简约”(《谈译论学录》111-112)。他对如何处理“美与真”,还具体论道:首先,一般译者有一个“通病”,“即喜欢把原作当中重复的字眼还于其多彩”,这要避免,因为有时候重复“是想赋予其力量”,好比一个“不断重复”的“主旋律”;其次,很多译者“想方设法要把简洁变得美丽、灿烂”,因为“担心别人认为其文字不好”;再次,对于原作中个性化的比喻必须重视,随意“归化”会失去“用词的色彩和节奏”,“失去原来独特的生命”。“因此,我始终把‘真’摆在第一位”(《翻译与翻译研究》229)。许钧是在尊重当中求真,在求真的基础上求美。一个美的东西,只有是真实的反映,才能在欣赏中引人向上或给人正能量。哪怕它很质朴,甚至“初若艰涩”,但经得起审视,因而“渐看渐佳”;一个美的东西,倘若表里不一,去掉了外在的装饰,恐怕会让人败兴,“初喜而终厌”(《傅雷文集·艺术卷》232)。

理论的探索常常围绕着翻译实践。“近几年,我特别关注文学翻译的语言问题”,2022年许钧在《翻译与文学论稿》中如是说,因为他敏锐地注意到,“关于翻译,尤其是文学翻译,我们当下的研究对语言层面的关注越来越少”,“更重要的是评价混乱,有不少问题没有引起重视,深刻的思考也较为缺乏”(23-24)。我们知道,文学语言的价值就在文学性,文学性恰如雅各布森所说,就是“让语言信息变成艺术品的东西”(25)。然而,在当下的文学翻译中,许钧发现,“恰恰就是这种文学性,这种让语言信息变成艺术品的东西往往难以把握,在语言的转换中,经常被翻译者所忽视,或者因为具有很强的抗译性,而被‘改造’,被大而‘化’之。更有甚者,以通顺、流畅为名,被随意改变”(25)。许钧特别提到了“外语性”一词,它并不是指在翻译活动的语言转换中产生的现象,而是指一部作品尤其一部优秀的作品生成过程中呈现的具有语言个性化创作的文学审美特质,它是“具有语言创造意识的作家”“偏离语言规范”,“超越语言的极限”,“在对一种陌生的语言的追求”中,通过语言句法、句式的创造,让语言“生成-他者”(德勒兹语)(27-28),而变得与众不同,别具特色和表现力,因而这种“外语性”既是作家个性化创作的标识,也是文学作品审美价值所在。普鲁斯特说“美好的书是用某种类似外语的语言写成的”(27),正是最好的解释。所以,“优秀的文学翻译家应该识别并保存原文本的‘外语性’,也就是保存原文本的

‘特质’，但却要力戒‘翻译腔’”（29）。然而“在外国文学汉译中，凡与母语的习惯表达、习惯句式、习惯比喻有不合的地方，往往被视为‘翻译腔’”（30），这一点需要我们警醒、重视。许钧认为，“一位翻译家，如果忽视了作家具有特质性的句式创造，那么在翻译中（……）作家所追求的‘外语性’自然会被抹杀”（32），而“扼杀了原文的异质性，也违背了翻译为异而生的本质使命”（31）。所以，“文学翻译的语言问题，关乎作家的思维、作家审视世界的方式和作家的风格，需要我们加以重视，予以研究”（34）。

三、中国文学“走出去”背景下的新探索

许钧的翻译活动一直重视两点：一，理论要与实践相结合；二，翻译要服务当下，回应国家的发展战略需求。在我国的文学翻译由最初的以“请进来”为主到如今的“请进来”与“走出去”并重的时代背景下，他积极投入我国中译外研究的学术空白，几乎在出现问题的第一时间，独立或合作发表了“现状、问题与建议——关于中国文学走出去的思考”、“关于加强中译外研究的几点思考”、“文学翻译模式与中国文学对外译介”、“译入与译出：困惑、问题与思考”、“当下翻译研究中值得思考的几个问题”、“关于深化中国文学外译研究的几点意见”等文，同时也在不少访谈中清晰地阐明了自己的思想。许钧在“走出去”背景下的文学翻译研究主要分为两部分：

（一）围绕中国文学外译实践活动展开探讨

1、中国文学主动走出去的必要性

在许钧看来，“文化‘走出去’要以文学‘走出去’为先导”，因为“优秀文学作品尽管讲述不同民族的故事，却因为始终将人的存在作为终极思考对象而能引起全世界读者的共鸣”。与中国经济对世界经济的发展贡献相比，中国文化对外的输出远远不够。“走出去”活动“有利于提升国家文化软实力”，许钧说，“这不是推销自己，而是文化自觉自信的表现”（《翻译与翻译研究》192、199、239）。他认为，“翻译活动一方面要把外面好的东西译进来，同时把我们好东西译出去，这是傅雷的一种精神的重新发扬，要美美与共”。早在21世纪初，许钧就说：“世界已经到了该阅读中国文学的时候了”；“精神文化层面的交流，就是应该积极主动，这是我们的责任，也是对他者需要的呼应”（《翻译与文学论稿》335、332、321）。他强调：“不能被动地等待西方汉学家根据他们的需要和意愿来选择翻译中国典籍，而要具有前瞻性，主动承担起中国典籍对外译介与传播的历史重任”。“中国文化主动‘走出去’，表达了中华民族为推进世界各种文明交流交融的美好愿望，也顺应了丰富世界文化、维护文化多样性的时代要求”，“是时代的呼唤，也是历史的必然”（《关于翻译的新思考》202、14-15）。

2、关于文学外译中存在的障碍、困惑等问题

许钧是一个有责任感、有担当的学者。面对文学外译实践中出现的种

种问题乃至争议等，他旗帜鲜明而又不失说服力地表达了自己的观点。对于实践中为了迎合西方读者而采取的功利主义翻译策略与方法，他明确指出，“把因接受国的文化之隔、心理之隔、心态之隔而采取的一些着眼于当下的变通之策，当作译介的普遍规律或永恒的价值标准去推广”，“值得警惕”。他高度赞同习近平总书记的指导意见，即对外译介应展现的是“具有中国特色、体现中国精神、蕴藏中国智慧”的优秀作品（《关于翻译的新思考》104、203）。他认为，“如果‘走出去’的不是真正的中国文学，而是经过翻译‘改头换面’的中国文学，那么这样的‘走出去’到底还值不值得追求与期待”，“很值得深思”。“任何阶段性的翻译方法都是当下的一种选择，不应遮蔽中国文学、文化‘走出去’的本质目标与根本追求”（《翻译与翻译研究》53、56）。而对于像“熊猫丛书”“这样的具有战略意义的出版物，仅仅以当下的市场销售与读者接受情况来衡量便得出否定性的结论，是值得商榷的”（《关于翻译的新思考》14）。任何接受都有一个过程，不可能一蹴而就，所以他说要理性对待“被接受焦虑”。他还指出，“西方译者的翻译（……）比较看重目的语读者阅读习惯和审美情趣，大多采用归化翻译策略”，以至于“有不少中国典籍的译介出现了严重的‘西方化’色彩，曲解、误读中国文化的现象较为普遍”。然而，中国文学、文化主动走出去是要向西方展示一个不同于西方的东方文化。为此，许钧特别尖锐地指出，“译入行为与译出行为有着本质上的差别。（……）要避免随意套用译入理论阐释译出行为”（《关于翻译的新思考》202-208）。许钧也在提高翻译质量、避免急功近利的浮躁翻译、开展翻译模式研究以及加强传播途径研究等方面提出了务实、科学、可行的方法与策略。

3、理论上进一步深入分析和阐释

翻译是因为两种语言之间存在着“异”，这个“异”包括语言之异、思维之异、文化之异和审美之异等，除了两种语言符号上的“异”之外，它还可能是作者本人的个性化、独特性的艺术创造，或可能是源语国具有的民族性、地方性的色彩。翻译既要消除“异”造成的沟通障碍，又要设法传递出“异”，让对方了解真实的“他者”。无论是对外国文学译入，还是对中国文学译出，翻译都是一场“异”的考验。许钧作为国内较早提出翻译伦理观的学者，把安托万·贝尔曼（Antoine Berman）的“尊重他异性”翻译伦理观与布特罗斯·加利（Boutros-Ghali）的“发展文化多样性”文化观相结合，在此基础上，针对中译外过程中的现实问题与争议，明确指出，翻译中的“异”离不开“自我”与“他者”的关系，翻译的本质“在于自我与他者建立某种联系”。在贝尔曼看来，“翻译的伦理行为在于把‘他者’当作‘他者’来承认和接受”，“尊重原作中语言和文化的异质性”，这种尊重的态度就是对“忠实”的定义。“忠实”与“差异”都是贝尔曼翻译伦理思想的核心内容。从这个认识出发，许钧指出：中国“文学对外译介与传播中的翻译方法问题，就其本质而言，折射的是（……）

如何看待语言文化异质性、如何对待他者文化的伦理问题”。所以，“避免中国文学（……）‘走出去’的过程中遭受误读或曲解”，使走出去的“他者”得到应有的尊重，使其异质性得到保存，“得到真实的、有效的传播”，这既是对翻译“伦理的守护”，也是“抵抗文化霸权”，“坚决维护文化多样性”的需要。他认为，“中国文学保持自身，其实就是对世界文学的贡献，因为差异本身就是价值”（《翻译与翻译研究》45-57、192）。“以易懂、接受为名的任何‘改’或‘编’，都走向了‘异’的反面”。他特别提醒，“一些具有强烈个性的创作，带着中国文化与思想基因和个人对生命独特体验与表达的方方面面，在西方的语境中，是否应该得到应有的理解与尊重，其表现的‘异质性’，是否能在异的考验中开放出新生命之花，是值得我们译学界认真思考、慎重对待的”（《关于翻译的新思考》104-107）。

4、战略上思考相关政策方向

经笔者梳理，大致有以下几点：首先，把中国文学外译价值与中国文化的核心价值结合起来思考“走出去”问题。“找到自己的文化之根”，清醒认识外译的意义、目的和作用，把“中国选择”和“中国阐释”作为建构中国文化价值观的基础；其次，正确体认对外译介所承载的国家意志。传播中国形象的亲和力、感染力和吸引力，应为走出去的首要目的，“促使中国文化加入世界文化对话与融合，进而为世界文化的发展提供中国方案，为建构世界文化多样性贡献中国力量”（《关于翻译的新思考》83、203-207）应为最终目的；再次，从翻译的历史性和人类文明发展史的高度来审视中国文学外译活动，客观、理性看待谢天振教授指出的当下中国文学对外译介的“时间差”和“语言差”现象，重在考量和谋划中国文学走出去的未来恒久之道、之效；最后，既要“加强基于文学译介与生成全过程的系统研究”（《翻译与文学论稿》71），把握并提高翻译质量，又要在建立译者、作者、经纪人或出版商家密切联系与合作的基础上，开展并加强译介与传播机制的研究。¹

（二）新时期对翻译本质、价值与作用、使命以及精神的再认识

1、关于翻译本质

许钧曾在《翻译论》中提出，翻译具有社会性、文化性、符号转换性、创造性和历史性五个本质特征，并具有相应的社会价值、文化价值、语言价值、创造价值和历史价值。这些价值“突显了交流、传承、沟通、创造与发展的翻译的本质属性”（《关于翻译的新思考》9）。在翻译活动出现了新的特点，翻译活动的走向有了新的变化的当下，许钧一如既往地“何为译、为何译、译何为”的译道上不断追问，探索与时俱进的新认知。可能由于中国文学外译的新生命的诞生与域外传播情况格外让他关注和思虑，他在原先五个本质特征的基础上，又增加了翻译的“生成性”本质特征，他认为，“一部著作到

1 参见 高方、许钧：“现状、问题与建议——关于中国文学走出去的思考”，《中国翻译》6（2010）：5-9。

另外的文化中会有一个新的生命，要适应新的语境和读者，需要不断成长，所以从译介到传播的过程，是生成的过程”（《翻译与文学论稿》153）。这也充分表现出他勇于完善自我理论建构的姿态。

2、关于翻译价值与作用

许钧说：“进入21世纪以来，我一直在思考翻译价值问题”。过去对翻译价值的理解，多限于“工具性”之“用”，这种工具性的认识也是导致中国文学走出去中急于求成的功利主义倾向的原因之一。我们应该看到，翻译为“改革开放和中华民族的复兴起到了开拓性的作用”，也为“中华文化走向世界（……），提升中国在国际舞台形象发挥了重要作用”。所以，许钧认为，建立翻译价值观，要超越翻译的工具之“用”。“打破隔阂，开阔视野，促进理解与交流（……）增进不同民族文明的互学互鉴，丰富与繁荣世界文化，（才）是翻译的价值所在。这是在新的历史时代对翻译基本价值的一种新的认识”（《关于翻译的新思考》3-7）。翻译对文化交流与社会发展具有强大的推动作用，就在于它是“一种建构性力量”，这种力量表现在，无论外国文学译进来，还是中国文学走出去，它不仅仅是去再现一种异域的文学形象、民族形象或异国情调，而是要在文化交流的基础上，传递一种思想，让思想异地生根，开花结果。所以，许钧才会深有感触：“翻译在本质上，属于思想之事”（《关于翻译的新思考》254），他才会对翻译的理解与认识，从文字、文学、文化层面扩展到文字、文学、文化和思想的层面（《翻译与翻译研究》37、145）。翻译即便是文学翻译，也是文化、思想的交流，传承和发展的活动。许钧从“长葆青春的中华文化”绵延不断的发展史中，深刻地理解了季羨林先生感慨的“翻译之为用大矣哉”，又从中国文化走出去的战略高度，进一步认识到翻译在人类命运共同体建构中，“发挥着‘无用之用’”（《翻译与文学论稿》4）。

3、关于翻译使命

2002年5月，加利先生访问南京大学，发表了题为“语言多元与文化的多样性”的演讲。许钧说：“加利的演讲对我思考翻译的使命问题有重要启示”。不久，他在《文化多样性与翻译的使命》一文中，结合加利为其《翻译论》的题词“翻译有助于发展文化多样性，而文化多样性则有助于加强世界和平文化的建设”，明确提出，“翻译应该承担维护文化多样性的历史使命”（《关于翻译的新思考》80-81）。因为当今的世界化进程中存在着文化霸权主义，对文化多样性构成威胁。“而要维护文化多样性，‘语言的多样性’是首要条件”（《谈谈论学录》158）。许钧在随后的一篇文章中进一步阐明，“促进世界各国的文化相互理解与了解，进而促进其交流与对话，维护文化的多样性，共同创造人类的灿烂文化，应该是翻译的使命所在，此乃翻译之大道”（《译道与文心》235）。2014年，他在回答“怎样才能维护文化多样性，加强世界和平文化建设”时说：作为译者，一，在理解翻译的跨文化交流本质的基础上，应对实践中的文化因素更为敏感，对保留和传达

文化因素更为谨慎留心；二，要以平等的心态去善待各种不同的语言，不能听凭语言的单一化，放任某种“话语”的特权；三，勇敢承担起翻译在语言、文学、文化、社会、历史等种种层面的使命，就是最好的落实（《翻译与翻译研究》103-104）。翻译的使命不再仅仅是促进两种语言、两种文化之间的沟通交流，还要让文化交流向更健康的方向发展，那就是在多样性的文化得以维护和平等对话的基础上，促进世界和平文化的建设，为人类和平做贡献。许钧多次强调翻译的这一“不可推卸的历史使命”，是因为翻译从业者众，要让广大译者明白，“只有更深刻地理解翻译的使命与目的，才能合理使用方法与策略”（《译道与文心》236）。而且，译者笔下的语言文字已“不再被看作是一种操作性的被动的工具，而是具有能动的创造作用”（《谈译论学录》161）的。

4、关于翻译精神

翻译的精神也是许钧近几年特别关注的一个层面。他曾接受采访说：“翻译是一种对外部世界的关注。翻译的精神就是打开自身，面对外部世界，去寻找对自身有用，与我们的思想、生活、成长相关的东西，拿来和大家分享，这是翻译最为朴素也最为根本的精神”（《翻译与文学论稿》321）。简言之，“开放的精神，就是翻译的精神”（《关于翻译的新思考》84）。从另一个角度，许钧也说：“翻译因‘异’而生，为‘异’而译”，“翻译中导入的任何‘异质’因素，都是激活目的语文化的因子，具有创新作用”，所以，“自我向他者的敞开，本身就孕育着一种求新求异的创造精神”（《译道与文心》178）。当然，翻译还具有其他的精神如求真精神等，正如上文对傅雷的翻译精神所做的总结。不过在此，还是有必要结合许钧近年来对翻译的深层思考，进一步发掘翻译的其他精神内涵。许钧坚信的翻译的开放精神，在国家“改革开放”后得到充分发挥，我们打破了原本封闭的自我世界，开放思想，吸收外来，学习与借鉴了他人之长，才有了今天令世人瞩目和羡慕的巨大成就，才有了我们比以往更强烈的文化自信和文化自觉，因而有了中国文化主动“走出去”的战略的提出与实施。如果说，在传统的请进来文学翻译中的开放精神，是指具有人文情怀的中国翻译家对域外人文精神的传递，在对所求“新”之理解和对所求“异”之包容中，主动沟通引进，从而确定了翻译具有人文精神的话，那么，今天的中国文学文化主动走出去，是为了世界文学文化的丰富与发展，为了有助于世界和平文化的建设，为了人类命运共同体中人文主义思想的壮大而向世界做出的中国贡献，如此，应可以说，有着使命感的许钧等翻译家们已从人文情怀走向更大的“人类情怀”（《翻译与文学论稿》161），翻译的人文精神在当下中国新的历史时期又得到发扬光大。

结语

许钧之所以在翻译方面成就斐然，一个主要原因是，他一生坚持只“做

翻译、教翻译、研究翻译”（《译道与文心》177），心无旁骛。他和傅雷一样对文学翻译情有独钟，不仅热爱翻译，在翻译过程中严肃认真，执著求真，而且还都具有创造性转化的过人功力。柳鸣九先生说：傅雷是“一位最有文学史家的价值辨析力与艺术鉴赏力的译家，（……）一位优秀文化遗产真正的品味纯正的继承者与传播者”（《傅雷的精神世界及其时代意义》2）；许钧用自己的翻译经历寄语年轻的译者们：“一个真正的翻译家应该有发现经典的能力，然后通过你的翻译能够成就经典。要发现原文的价值，通过你的翻译来中国成就经典”（《翻译与文学论稿》335）。傅雷在翻译过程中与罗曼·罗兰“产生了强烈的情感共鸣，达成了精神的契合”（《批评与阐释》279）；许钧与勒克莱齐奥的交往则是当代译坛的佳话，有力地说明了“翻译是历史的奇遇，是人类灵魂的共鸣”（《翻译与翻译研究》219）。

当然，傅雷先生认为，翻译重在实践，要谈理论，最后很容易见仁见智，不了了之，故偶尔只有翻译经验点滴传人（《傅雷文集·文学卷》227）。许钧敬傅雷先生人品与译品，称他是“译坛常青树”。他接过傅雷先生未尽工作，理论与实践相结合，形而下与形而上贯通，在传统中挖掘承继，在外来流派中广收博取，研究探索，借鉴创新，不宗一派一家，超越一派一家，形成独树一帜的翻译理论高峰，正如吕俊教授所说，成为“实践的典范，理论的先锋”（《批评与阐释》106），这是他对傅雷翻译精神最好的继承与发扬。在翻译中，许钧和傅雷先生一样，都是日日伏案，夜夜挑灯，都有一种孤独的感受，但他们都没有因此而放弃。傅雷先生说：“赤子孤独了，会创造一个世界，创造许多心灵的朋友！”（《傅雷文集·书信卷》371）。许钧通过自己的苦苦求真，让无数人“从封闭走向开放”，“拥抱了快乐与希望”（《批评与阐释》272、263），因而也让他天涯存知己。重要的是，许钧从孤独中收获了一份孤诣，对文学翻译高瞻远瞩，有着独到的理解与认识、视野和眼光。

《生命之轻与翻译之重》，许钧用这个书名是要告诉我们，他把翻译看的重于生命，是生命的“至福”（《译道与文心》177），值得他用一生来热爱、追求和奉献。强烈的责任感和神圣的使命感构成了他再接再厉、奋斗不息的内在精神动力，他说：“任重道远，我将在翻译与翻译研究之路上继续前行”（《关于翻译的新思考》84）。

Works Cited

傅雷：《傅雷文集·艺术卷》。合肥：安徽文艺出版社，1998年。

[Fu Lei. *Fu Lei's Collected Works (Art)*. Hefei: Anhui Literature & Art Publishing House, 1998.]

——：《傅雷文集·书信卷》。合肥：安徽文艺出版社，1998年。

[— *Fu Lei's Collected Works (Letters)*. Hefei: Anhui Literature & Art Publishing House, 1998.]

——：《傅雷文集·文学卷》。合肥：安徽文艺出版社，1998年。

[— *Fu Lei's Collected Works (Literature)*. Hefei: Anhui Literature & Art Publishing House, 1998.]

高方、许钧：“现状、问题与建议——关于中国文学走出去的思考”，《中国翻译》6（2010）：5-9。

[Gao Fang and Xu Jun. “Current Situation, Problems and Suggestions: Reflections on the Going-Out of Chinese Literature.” *Chinese Translators Journal* 6 (2010): 5-9.]

许多：《批评与阐释：许钧翻译与研究评论集》。杭州：浙江大学出版社，2019年。

[Xu Duo. *Criticism and Interpretation: Commentaries on Xu Jun's Translation and Studies*. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2019.]

许钧：《历史的奇遇：文学翻译论》。南京：南京大学出版社，2015年。

[Xu Jun. *The Adventures of History: A Study on Literary Translation*. Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 2015.]

——：《谈译论学录》。杭州：浙江大学出版社，2019年。

[— *Essays on Translation*. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2019.]

——：《傅雷的精神世界及其时代意义》。上海：中西书局，2011年。

[— *Fu Lei's Spiritual World and Its Contemporary Significance*. Shanghai: Zhongxi Book Company, 2011.]

——：《关于翻译的新思考》。杭州：浙江大学出版社，2020年。

[— *New Reflections on Translation*. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2020.]

——：《翻译论》。武汉：湖北教育出版社，2003年。

[— *On Translation*. Wuhan: Hubei Education Press, 2003.]

——：《翻译与文学论稿》。杭州：浙江大学出版社，2023年。

[— *On Translation and Literature*. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2023.]

——：《文学翻译批评研究》。南京：译林出版社，1992年。

[— *Research on Literary Translation Criticism*. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 1992.]

——：《文字·文学·文化——〈红与黑〉汉译研究》。南京：译林出版社，1996年。

[— *Text, Literature, Culture. Studies on Chinese Translations of The Red and the Black*. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 1996.]

——：《译道与文心》。杭州：浙江大学出版社，2018年。

[— *Translation Tao and Literary Mind*. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2018.]

许钧、宋学智：《20世纪法国文学在中国的译介与接受》。武汉：湖北教育出版社，2007年。

[Xu Jun and Song Xuezhi. *On Translation and Reception of 20th Century French Literature in China*. Wuhan: Hubei Education Press, 2007.]

许钧等：《文学翻译的理论与实践——翻译对话录》。南京：译林出版社，2001年。

[Xu Jun, et al. *Theory and Practice of Literary Translation—Dialogues on Translation*. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2001.]

——：《翻译与翻译研究——许钧教授访谈录》。杭州：浙江大学出版社，2018年。

[— *Translation and Translation Studies—Collected Interviews with Professor Xu Jun*. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2018.]

——：《傅雷翻译研究》。南京：译林出版社，2016年。

[— *A Study on Fu Lei's Translation Works*. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2016.]

文学译介、文学研究与跨文化交流： 许钧与勒克莱齐奥在中国的诗意历险

Literary Translation, Literary Research and Intercultural Exchange: Xu Jun and the Poetic Adventures of Le Clézio in China

袁筱一 (Yuan Xiaoyi)

内容摘要：早在 1983 年，法国当代作家、2008 年诺贝尔文学奖获得者勒克莱齐奥就借助《沙漠》的中译本开启了他在中国的“诗意历险”。作为勒克莱齐奥在中国最早的译者之一，许钧对勒克莱齐奥的译介、研究构成了一个文学翻译与接受的经典案例。原作者对译者的“呼唤”，译者对原作者的“回应”，双方基于信任与尊重的平等交流，这一切使得著译双方能够在本质为跨文化交流的翻译过程中得以不断相向而行，推进对于彼此、对于彼此所在的文化的深入理解。而伴随着这一过程的，还有译者翻译观的日臻成熟以及著者对于文学新的可能性的不断探索。勒克莱齐奥在中国的诗意历险，也让我们看到了勒克莱齐奥所阐述的世界文学的可能。

关键词：许钧；勒克莱齐奥；文学译介；跨文化交流；世界文学

作者简介：袁筱一，华东师范大学外语学院教授，主要研究领域为法语文学与翻译理论。

Title: Literary Translation, Literary Research and Intercultural Exchange: Xu Jun and the Poetic Adventures of Le Clézio in China

Abstract: In 1983, the renowned contemporary French writer and 2008 Nobel Prize in Literature laureate, Le Clézio, began his “poetic adventure” in China with the Chinese translation of his work *Desert*. Xu Jun, one of Le Clézio’s earliest translators in China, has played a pivotal role in introducing and studying Le Clézio’s works, creating a classic case of literary translation and reception. This dynamic process, characterized by the original author’s “call” and the translator’s “response,” facilitated through equal exchanges grounded in mutual trust and respect, exemplifies the essence of cross-cultural communication in translation. This collaborative endeavor has not only led to a deeper mutual understanding of each other’s cultures but also contributed to the maturation of the translator’s perspective on translation and the

author's ongoing exploration of new literary possibilities. Le Clézio's poetic adventure in China illuminates the potential of world literature as envisioned by the author.

Keywords: Xu Jun; Le Clézio; Literary Translation; Literary Research; world literature

Author: Yuan Xiaoyi, Ph.D, Professor at the School of Foreign Languages, East China Normal University (Shanghai 200241, China). The concentration of her study is on French literature and translation theory (Email: claire_yuan 73@163.com).

文学翻译的本质与目的性 (finalité), 从来都是翻译理论中讨论的热点话题之一, 也颇具有形而上的意味。利科 (Paul Ricoeur) 在他那篇著名的讨论不可译性的“翻译的范式”一文中曾充满诗意地反问道: “如果我们不曾涉足那些令人焦虑的不可言说的疆域 (……) 我们在爱情和友情里的那些最美好的互动, 是否还能保有这种审慎的美德——秘密 / 审慎——让我们得易于近处保持距离呢?” (保罗·利科 96) “于近处保持距离”, 一语破的地道出了 (可以维持的) 爱情或者友情的实质, 也是对于 (可以完成的) 翻译的最好类比。正如我们所看到的那样, 文学翻译开启的往往是一段全新的精神交流和对话, 在某种程度上, 围绕着译作所发生的一切, 其价值往往会“溢出”译作本身, 进入一个更加宏阔的语境。

许钧对于法国当代作家, 2008 年诺贝尔文学奖获得者勒克莱齐奥 (Jean-Marie Gustave Le Clézio) 的译介、研究就是一个经典的范例, 生动地诠释了文学翻译如何在具体的历史语境中以“于近处保持距离”的方式实现跨文化交流, 并且在对彼此的理解中不断唤起新的创造。当然这绝非仅是历史的偶然, 事实上, 勒克莱齐奥在中国的译介发生——我们在此采用的是伊格尔顿“发生” (event) 的概念¹——同时也是许钧翻译观的或然产物。早在 2003 年, 许钧就明确地指出, “翻译是以符号转换为手段, 意义再生为任务的一项跨文化的交际活动” (许钧, 《翻译论》 75)。我们或许可以说, 著译双方对这场精神交流的期待, 对这场精神交流去向何方的共识以及在交流过程中的彼此丰富是这一语言的历险得以实现的根本前提。

一、原作者的呼唤与译者的选择: 由远及近

倘若我们将翻译看作是阐释循环中的一站, 这一站在某种程度上总是位于原作之后, 这就导致了译作与原作之间通常完成的是跨时空的对话, 因而对话的价值通常也需要被放置在更为广阔的文化史背景中才能得到理解。诚然, 随着全球化的深入, 文化流通的速度也在加快, 译者与著者处在同一个时空之下, 并且能够跨越地理和语言的边界进行主体间对话的可能性逐渐增加, 然而这并不意味着精神对话仅仅凭借译作的完成或是著译双方的晤面就

1 伊格尔顿认为唤起“异”的感觉的可以被称为“文学事件”, 即文学的“发生” (event)。

能够发生。

这种在两个平等主体之间的精神对话在一方面当然取决于原作的“呼唤”：就像本雅明在《译者的任务》中指出的那样，取决于作品“从本质上是否接受翻译——亦即与翻译这种形式的涵义相吻合——是否欲求翻译？”（Berman 55）¹虽然勒克莱齐奥是在1983年，因为其《沙漠》的中文版问世才开启了中国之旅，但是早在他写作的初期，勒克莱齐奥就已经做好欣赏差异、拥抱差异的准备。在后来一次和许钧的访谈中，他明确表示，文学让他产生热爱的地方，就在于“借助翻译的工作”，造就“一种生命的经纬”，“逃离单一身份的力量，创造超越于学校、陈词与边界的语言的力量”（许钧 勒克莱齐奥 61）。但是在另一方面，原作呼唤翻译也隐含着另一个问题，即是否“能找到适切的译者”，而这个问题——安托瓦纳·贝尔曼继而写道——则取决于是不是在“一个对的时刻”（bon moment）（Berman 56）。

考察勒克莱齐奥与许钧的相逢进而相知的过程，我们似乎就能够理解何为“适切”，何为“对的时刻”。勒克莱齐奥的《沙漠》（《沙漠的女儿》）在1980年获得首届的保罗·莫朗奖，也就受到了我国译者的关注。许钧就是在翻译《沙漠》时和勒克莱齐奥取得了联系，得到了原作者热切的回应。1982年，勒克莱齐奥为《沙漠》中译本写了序言，虽然简短，却显示出非常诚挚的“靠近”愿望。中国读者对他仍然一无所知，而他如此简单描写他的作品：“《沙漠的女儿》讲述的是一个英勇斗争的故事，它描写了一位老人在信仰的激励下，在人民力量的支持下与殖民主义灭绝人性的侵略进行了双方实力不相等的斗争，同时也描写了一位年轻姑娘在当今西方世界与不公正和贫困所进行的力量悬殊的孤立斗争”（钱林森，“永远的行者：勒克莱齐奥与中国” 49）。然而，在《沙漠的女儿》之后，却需要“差不多等了近十年”（钱林森，“永远的行者：勒克莱齐奥与中国” 50），中国读者才再一次读到了更为丰富的勒克莱齐奥。在90年代初期的一波勒克莱齐奥的译介小高潮中，许钧在目的语适切的语境下，主动选择了勒克莱齐奥的处女作《诉讼笔录》。许钧曾经在北京大学人文工作坊的一次演讲中谈及在他翻译生涯的初期，虽然读到了勒克莱齐奥，但是完全不能理解，是在翻译了《沙漠》之后，“又回头去找了《诉讼笔录》，发现以前读不懂的部分渐渐能够理解了。在1991-1992年，我把这本书慢慢地翻译了出来”（许钧，“文学翻译、文化交流与学术研究的互动” 73）。相较于《沙漠》的译介，这次主动的选择则更反映了目的语文学接近出发语文学的愿望。

90年代既是全面译介勒克莱齐奥的开始，同时也是将勒克莱齐奥纳入中国当代法（外）国文学研究视野的开始。柳鸣九主持的法国廿世纪文学丛书里就收录了勒克莱齐奥的《诉讼笔录》，邀请许钧翻译，并于1992年出版。也是在这一年，勒克莱齐奥来中国，和许钧见面，从此之后开启了一段友谊的

1 该译文译自 Antoine Berman 在书中对《译者的任务》的法文译文。

佳话。在三十余年的时间里，勒克莱齐奥每有新作，都要寄给许钧，而许钧对中国出版界和文学研究界的影响也日益增大，因此在此后的过程中一直主动向中国的出版社推荐翻译勒克莱齐奥的作品，并且让身边的学生和同行一起阅读、翻译和研究勒克莱齐奥。在2008年勒克莱齐奥获得诺贝尔文学奖之前，除了《沙漠》和《诉讼笔录》之外，勒克莱齐奥的《少年心事》《战争》《流浪的星星》《金鱼》和《乌拉尼亚》等重要作品都在许钧的有效推动下被翻译过来。柳鸣九为《诉讼笔录》和《少年心事》所作的序，许钧为《战争》所作的序，袁筱一为《流浪的星星》所作的序，都是中国最早的勒克莱齐奥研究文章，为中国读者深入理解勒克莱齐奥以及同时期的法国文学奠定了一定的基础。

许钧也是在这段友谊发生的过程中渐渐成长为一个成熟的翻译研究者和文学研究者，从而渐渐成长为能够与著者“平起平坐”的译者，一个能与勒克莱齐奥平等对话的精神主体。在勒克莱齐奥这一译介案例中，我们可以清晰地看到这一转折的确发生在90年代以后，并且在勒克莱齐奥获得诺贝尔文学奖之前已经变得非常显见。许钧描述过2004年前后，“有机会推荐诺贝尔文学奖候选人，便向瑞典文学院推荐了他，也把我的推荐信寄给了勒克莱齐奥先生，跟他说‘你一定会获得诺贝尔文学奖’”（许钧，“文学翻译、文化交流与学术研究的互动”73）。而2008年1月，许钧推荐翻译、校订的《乌拉尼亚》先于诺贝尔文学奖，获得了当年中国的“21世纪年度最佳外国小说奖”。勒克莱齐奥获诺奖之后，他受到许钧的邀请，数度来到中国，与中国的作家展开对话，并且受邀成为许钧当时任教的南京大学的客座教授。他在南京大学的同事不仅推动了对他本人作品的研究，他还带领学生去发现法语文学的新领域。毫无疑问的是，中国对勒克莱齐奥的翻译、阅读与研究已经成为勒克莱齐奥作品“来世的生命”，这一生命与其“前世的生命”共存共生、彼此呼应，而不仅仅是其法语作品微弱的余音。

即便对于著者而言，译者往往是离他作品最近的读者之一，这种彼此毫无保留的相向而行却并不总是能够发生。纵观这段友谊的发生与逐渐加深，我们可以发现，成就这样一段“于近处保持距离”的美好关系必须具备三个前提：其一是双方都有彼此接近的愿望，正是这种愿望不仅改变了著者被译的被动状态，也改变了译者“被选中”的被动状态，使得双方的由远及近都成了主动选择的结果；其二是双方虽然并不位于同样的“语言的森林”之中，却能够站在同样的高度，这一点保证了对话的效度与持续性；最后则是双方对于差异秉持相同的立场，著者能够将差异融入自己未来的写作之中，而译者则能够在尊重差异的基础之上以体现差异为己任。

二、翻译的本质就是互相尊重与自我丰富

一切都是从翻译开始的。

对于勒克莱齐奥来说，历险是双重意义的：即肉身的历险与语言的历险。勒克莱齐奥是一直在路上的人。少年时就有过在毛里求斯、尼日利亚生活的经历。长大后，勒克莱齐奥的足迹也遍布世界，在英国、泰国、墨西哥、毛里求斯、美国和中国都曾经长期居住。但是在某种程度上，或许语言的历险对于定义勒克莱齐奥的写作则更为重要。语言的历险也是双重的，一方面是将肉身的经验置于语言之中，再通过语言实现自己的历险想象，获取有别于现实经验的另一种经验。例如在《非洲人》中，他想象自己是个非洲人，“梦想自己的母亲是个黑人”，至于这一梦想的原因，他解释说“从非洲回来之后，我给自己编了一个故事，一段过往，借以逃避现实，因为在这个国家，在这座城市，我谁也不认识，我就是个外国人”（勒克莱齐奥 4）。另一方面，则是将自己的文字无条件地交付给另一种语言，期待翻译家创造新的“奇遇”。在一次访谈中，他诚挚地表达了他对译者的感谢，他说“感谢我作品的所有译者，特别感谢我的好友许钧教授，是他让我发现了深厚的中国文化，并有机会和学生们就跨文化、跨学科的主题进行交流”（高方 施雪莹 2）。这一表达并非完全出于谦逊，而是他对于语言的观念所致。在同一个访谈中，他详细地勾勒了自己语言观的变化，提起在创作初期执迷于语言的形式，甚至基于对20世纪60年代兴起的计算语言进行研究的基础上完成了小说《巨人》的创作，在穷尽抽象的词语的使用之后，“经历了一场精神危机”。多亏了巴拿马丛林的生活经历，让他意识到“自己提出的那些问题都是伪命题”，从而渐渐找到了适合自己的形式，也渐渐在“向传统的叙事回归”中找到了自己的风格。¹

可以说，勒克莱齐奥对于语言与写作使命的认知决定了他对于翻译所持的开放态度，并且最终反哺到他对于语言与写作使命的认知，让他得以不断“出发”探索新的写作和语言的可能性，从而不断丰富自身的写作。然而我们更需要指出的是，作为勒克莱齐奥在精神和语言上的重要对话者之一，许钧与勒克莱齐奥交往的三十余年，也是他的翻译观形成和日臻成熟的三十余年。这才是这场平等对话得以发生的根本原因。许钧的翻译研究也为勒克莱齐奥的文学译介、文学研究和跨文化交流活动带来了新的视野，让他能够带着翻译的“新问题”，重新思考文学译介、文学研究在“没有明确的边界，也没有精确的起点和终点”（塞缪尔·亨廷顿 28）的文明互鉴中能够起到的作用。反过来，他的文学译介、文学研究以及所参与的文学（文化）交往为他的翻译研究不断提出新的问题，让他的翻译研究早就超越了从文本到文本的层面，也让他完成了从翻译文化观到文化翻译观的飞跃。在这个过程中，对于勒克莱齐奥作品的翻译、与勒克莱齐奥的交往、将勒克莱齐奥的作品和思考引入中国文学乃至中国文化的语境之中，这一切不仅成为理想译介与接受的范本，更

1 参见 高方、施雪莹：“文学的守常与流变——访谈诺贝尔文学奖得主勒克莱齐奥”，《上海交通大学学报》（哲学社会科学版）2（2023）：4。

是进入良性循环的中外跨文化交流的范本。

我们不妨简单地回顾一下在和勒克莱齐奥交往的三十多年的时间里许钧翻译观的发展与变化。作为中国翻译理论研究的第一代学者，许钧在上世纪80年代中期就已经借鉴中西方翻译理论领域的思考，较为清晰地表达了翻译需要尊重原作风格的观点。尤其是在当时看来颇有些冒天下之大不韪的“关于风格再现”一文中，他提出“一个称职的译者，应辨别原作者特殊的艺术个性，原作特殊的风格，尽量排除自己的艺术个性与风格”（许钧，“关于风格再现”61）。这一原则也很好地在他对勒克莱齐奥早期作品的翻译中得到了贯彻。他曾经谈到1977年初读勒克莱齐奥时的“读不懂”。但恰恰是对于“读不懂”的“忘不了”¹让他在自己的翻译生涯之初就选择了勒克莱齐奥的作品，正是出于许钧对翻译本质的基本理解：即差异并不是拒绝翻译的理由，相反差异与非同时性正是翻译欲望产生的出发点。

90年代中期，翻译理论问题已经成为中国外语学界热议的问题。许钧敏锐地捕捉到了名著复译的现象，组织了《红与黑》的汉译讨论，将“如何译”与“为何译”的问题联系了起来，认为“切不能忽视或轻视‘文字’与‘文化’的关系，不能将‘文字’、‘文学’与‘文化’完全割裂开来”（许钧，“文字·文学·文化”168），已然将翻译的问题放置在跨文化交流的大背景之下。我们当然相信，许钧在理论研究中已然确立的翻译文化观与勒克莱齐奥能够进一步走入中国读者和中国的外国文学研究者的视野、从而真正开始他在中国的“诗意历险”密不可分。因为在这个时期的许钧看来，勒克莱齐奥的作品之所以会“呼唤”翻译，是因为它固然是文学的，却更是20世纪后半叶法国文化和思想的，反映了法国文学基于自身传统的反思与多样性。

随着新世纪的来临，许钧更是进一步强调了翻译的“目的性”——而不是目——决定了翻译的本质，认为“为了交流有了翻译，翻译促进了交流。翻译这一基本的跨文化交流活动的本质要求，翻译要以促进交流为己任”（许钧，“尊重、交流与沟通”86）。此后，他更是明确地表述了翻译与维护世界文化多样性之间的关系，将翻译的作用与价值提升到“加强世界和平文化建设”的高度。²在许钧的推动下，翻译勒克莱齐奥必然也是为了达成“促进文化交流”这一终极的目的性。在现实条件的许可下，于是转化为出发语和目的语的翻译家、作家、学者、出版社之间面对面的交流，推动所有的文化交流主体对他者文学和文化的阅读与理解。在勒克莱齐奥的案例上，或许还要加上作为老师的勒克莱齐奥与学生的交流。而在许钧的推动下，这一交流无疑已经碰撞出了新的火花，获取了跨文化遗产的历史维度。

基于翻译实践，并且在翻译与跨文化交流的实践中提炼理论问题，推动

1 参见许钧：“文学翻译、文化交流与学术研究的互动——以我和勒克莱齐奥的交往为例”，《外语教学》3（2018）：73。

2 参见许钧：“文化的多样性与翻译的使命”，《中国翻译》1（2005）：44。

理论思考，不断揭示翻译最为本质的方方面面，这既可以用来概括许钧从翻译家到翻译思想家的学术历程，也可以概括翻译这个阐释循环的价值所在。从文本到现象，从文字到文化，从“如何译”到“为何译”，从结果到过程，虽然译者与著者是从不同的路径，完成的是不同意义的文本和不同层面的跨文化交流，但好的翻译的发生，无疑都是达成心灵上的契合之后，不断丰富自我的过程。于许钧而言，是在翻译包括勒克莱齐奥在内的法国作者——同时代的，或者不同时代的——的过程中，不断丰富和完善自身的翻译观的过程；于勒克莱齐奥而言，同样是一个通过被翻译成新的语言，通过被新的语言的读者阅读和思考，不断地发现法语文学潜在的可能性，不断丰富自己的写作形式与内容的过程。于是，贝尔曼所谓的原作者与译者的“同时代性”（*contemporanéité*）的问题在他们的努力之中迎刃而解。一方面，作者的近距离存在并没有在他的作品之上“造成阴影”¹；而另一方面，译者也因为克制，因为对原作和原作者的尊重，因为对于翻译“任务”的清醒认识赢得了原作者的信任和尊重。

三、诗意的诱惑与再诱惑：世界文学的“理想”生成范式

译文进入不同的接受环境，在另一种语言里得到理解，从来都是前途未卜的历险，因而，无论是作为译者，还是作为研究者，阐释者的立场、观点和角度会具有决定性的作用。正因为译者往往是在目的语的语言中离作者最近的那个人，也往往是最先通过各种方式——译文正文、序言等译文副文本或是散见在报刊杂志上的各类文章——向尚未“遇到”原作者的译文读者介绍原作者及原作者作品的人。随着译者对于原作者的翻译、了解的全面和深入，他对原作品的理解往往更为全面，阐释的角度也往往会随之更为多元。

在许钧对于勒克莱齐奥的翻译与研究中，我们也能够清晰地看到这一变化。有趣的是，许钧虽然是勒克莱齐奥最早的译者之一，在其翻译勒克莱齐奥的初期却甚少涉入对勒克莱齐奥的介绍。或许是条件所限，还未能深入勒克莱齐奥作品、未能感受到原作者迫切“召唤”的时候，不愿意随意地将“自身的文化传统赋予原文文本”（韦努蒂 204）。而在 1984 年，《沙漠》的另一位译者钱林森曾经在《沙漠》译序的基础上，撰写过一篇题为“美和刺的统一——读法国当代小说”，这也是最早期的关于勒克莱齐奥研究的文章。在这篇文章中，钱林森着重指出的是“法国现实主义文学有着批判的传统，它是以批判揭露资产阶级生活为中心内容和主要特征的，作者往往并不致力于对生活中美发掘，而注重于对丑恶现象的暴露，这就使得这种现实主义文学一般都具有否定的特点”（钱林森，“美和刺的统一” 70）。对不公正的抗争，这诚然是勒克莱齐奥写作最为重要的一个维度，也是最显见的，与现

1 参见 Berman, A. *L'âge de la traduction «La tâche du traducteur» de Walter Benjamin un commentaire (textes établis par Isabelle Berman)*, Paris : Presses Universitaires de Vincennes, 2007, 81.

实密切关联的维度，但还远远不是其作品价值的全部。此后，在《战争》的序言中，许钧用同样富有“诗意”的笔调，指出了勒克莱齐奥对于现代文明的质疑，并且提醒读者注意作者“摒弃了一切传统小说的构件”，“一切都在于词”，证明了恰恰是词在“扼杀思想，挑起战争”。¹而在2008年《战争》的再版前言中，许钧则已经在对勒克莱齐奥较为丰富的译介基础上，同时也是在对勒克莱齐奥有了更深入的了解之后，揭示出勒克莱齐奥在三个层面上的重要价值：一是继承了“人文主义传统”，“以理解为基点”，感受“弱小的生命和社会边缘的人”，“去理解他们，揭示他们的命运”；二是“对现代文明有着清醒的认识和强烈的批判”；三是以“清醒的意识，关注他者，关注失落的文明”。²在这一再版前言中，许钧尤其强调勒克莱齐奥的写作是“清醒”的，换言之，也就是尤其强调勒克莱齐奥作品在现代社会中的理性价值。

的确，在勒克莱齐奥获得诺贝尔文学奖之后，也就是说，在对勒克莱齐奥的译介已经积累到一定程度之后，中国才真正进入了对于勒克莱齐奥的研究阶段。许钧仍然是这波研究高潮中的主导力量。在2009年到2021年的十余年中，许钧在文学研究期刊上发表了近20篇关于勒克莱齐奥的文章。其中既有与勒克莱齐奥在中国各种活动中的对谈实录，也有围绕着勒克莱齐奥的作品，与其他文学研究者的对谈，但更重要的，是对于勒克莱齐奥作品的“细读”研究。这些形式各异的研究涉及到勒克莱齐奥的创作历程、创作理念、创作主题、创作形式与创作风格，既有勒克莱齐奥本人的思考，也有包括许钧在内的中国法语文学研究者基于作品的独特视角，彼此之间互为佐证，互相推动。在与勒克莱齐奥的几次对谈中，许钧作为一个引导者，分别就写作中的历史与真实、个人记忆与集体记忆、虚构的起点与想象、文学的价值与文学的形式等一系列的问题与勒克莱齐奥展开深入的探讨，唤起作者对自身作品的再认识。而在研究文章中同样如此，许钧总是深入勒克莱齐奥的一部或者多部作品，同样从一个语言历险者的“经验”——即海德格尔所谓的“经由生命而生”——出发，对上述的所有问题进行再思考。在与勒克莱齐奥的对话中，许钧总是致力于引发勒克莱齐奥呈现更多“异”的因素，或者对“异”的因素进行阐释和再创造。而在研究文章中，许钧则更偏向于与现时的，中国的接受语境关联，揭示出这些“异”的因素在中国当下的意义。

我们不难发现，在系列的对话和研究文章中，有两个关键词是反复出现的，那就是“诗意”（或“诗学”的，对应的是法语的形容词 *poétique*）与“历险”（*aventure*）。在勒克莱齐奥获奖后不久，许钧在巴黎与勒克莱齐奥有过一次对话，几乎都围绕着勒克莱齐奥不同时期的作品展开。勒克莱齐奥对瑞

1 参见许钧：“译序”，《战争》，勒克莱齐奥著，李焰明、袁筱一译，许钧校，南京：译林出版社，2008年，第6页。

2 参见许钧：“我和勒克莱齐奥——再版前言”，《战争》，勒克莱齐奥著，李焰明、袁筱一译，许钧校，南京：译林出版社，2008年，第5-6页。

典文学院颁奖词里的“文明之上”与“文明之下”的“历险”做出了一定的解释，而许钧也提到他与同样关注过“文明之上”与“文明之下”的法国人类学家列维·斯特劳斯的关联，点出斯特劳斯更是居于“思想”层面，而勒克莱齐奥则居于“诗学”层面¹。在2016年的一次访谈中，勒克莱齐奥则完整地回应和勾勒了他作为“历险”的写作，许钧于是将这种由“词语和其中包含的感性”引导下的写作历险定义为“诗意的历险”，两个对谈者于是一起思考作为语言实践的写作与找到“自己的语言”的辩证关系。²此后，在2019年，许钧在“诗意诱惑与诗意生成——试论勒克莱齐奥的诗学历险”一文中系统地阐述了勒克莱齐奥笔下的“诗意历险”：在他看来，“诗意”是与作为存在方式的语言紧密相连的，是通过对“语言原生力量的探寻”创造在世经验，是基于语言之“真”，相信在人类的种种困境中语言所保留下来的希望之光，是赋予在世以一种深刻的人文关怀。³勒克莱齐奥的独特之处就在于他通过阅读与写作的实践，不断返回语言最本真的状态，行走在奔向本雅明所谓“纯语言”的道路上。

这难道不是最为“理想”的一种世界文学的范式吗？借助翻译家的工作，勒克莱齐奥读到、并且试图理解来自不同语言的文学。它们带有各自文化的传统，对勒克莱齐奥产生了种种的诱惑和冲动，让他想要将这些文字所承载的思想和诗意变为自己的思想和诗意。他幸运地找到了自己的语言和自己的表达方式，凭借自己的独特性诱惑着不同语言的译者和读者。他甚至幸运地在一些语言中寻觅到了许钧这样的对话者，他们共同构筑起的跨文化交流的种种平台又让不同的文学乃至文化之间加深了正向的，主动的理解。这种交流跨越了空间，同样能够跨越时间。2020年，勒克莱齐奥这一“诗意生成”再一次走向了高潮。他出版了一部关于唐诗的随笔。在《序言》中，他再次在中国的唐诗中找到了他一生致力于寻找的“大自然的语言”。他说，“唐诗中蕴含着深刻人性。它产生于对未来的未知和不确定之中（……）尽管在我们之间相隔了巨大的时间鸿沟，然而，在阅读过程中，我们感到同那个时代的诗人和艺术家是那么的近。我们能理解他们，那个时代与我们的时代是如此的相似”（勒克莱齐奥 董强 4）。

我们注意到，早在获得诺贝尔文学奖之前的勒克莱齐奥就和其他来自不同地区的法语作家一起，签署了《为了一种世界文学》的宣言。在宣言中，勒克莱齐奥和其他作家借助“复数的法语文学”这一事实，对于世界文学的“主流文学”假说提出了质疑，号称如果世界文学的中心还存在，“这个中心从

1 参见许钧：“勒克莱齐奥的文学创作与思想追踪——访诺贝尔文学奖得主勒克莱齐奥”，《外国文学研究》2（2009）：1-8。

2 参见许钧：“存在、写作与创造——勒克莱齐奥访谈录”，《文艺研究》6（2016）：73-81。

3 参见许钧：“诗意诱惑与诗意生成——试论勒克莱齐奥的诗学历险”，《浙江大学学报》（人文社会科学版）5（2016）：12-25。

今而后是在世界各地”（袁筱一 187）。

劳伦斯·韦努蒂（Lawrence Venuti）将世界文学理解为翻译文学，认为至少是“从读者的角度看，所谓世界文学与其说是原文作者创作出来的作品，还不如说是翻译过来的作品——这些译本将外文文本翻译为读者所处的某一个具体群体所使用的语言，通常是标准地方语或者多语状况下的主流语言”，因此，“没有翻译，世界文学就无法进行概念界定”。¹许钧始终坚持，翻译的价值就在于“人类语言、文化与社会发展中的一种建构性力量”（刘云虹 许钧 57-58），倡导译者应当自觉地以此为使命。我们看到，正是在这一理念之下，许钧对于勒克莱齐奥的译介、研究，他与勒克莱齐奥之间的相互影响构成了不断变动之中的世界文学的“理想”范式。它虽然不可能发生在所有的原作者与译者之间，却为我们提供了一种未来的世界文学可期待的前景。译者的任务当然不仅止于得到一个翻译的文本，以取悦自己或者目的语的读者，他应该有更大的野心，以其特有的，生产性的创造抵抗这个世界所有不公正的，语言的或者文化的控制。译者的任务，应该就像乔治·斯坦纳所说的一样，在于“竭尽所能地进行彻底解读”，“在我们的感触把握对象，同时又维护、促进了该对象自主的生命时”，进入“一个‘原创重复’的过程”（乔治·斯坦纳 30）。在许钧的翻译实践和跨文化实践中，则更进一步地显现为一个诗意生成的过程。

Works Cited

- Berman, A. *L'âge de la traduction. «La tâche du traducteur» de Walter Benjamin: un commentaire (textes établis par Isabelle Berman)*. Paris : Presses Universitaires de Vincennes, 2007.
- 高方、施雪莹：“文学的守常与流变——访谈诺贝尔文学奖得主勒克莱齐奥”，《上海交通大学学报》（哲学社会科学版）2（2023）：1-13。
- [Gao Fang and Shi Xueying. “Understanding Literature from both Conventional and Evolutionary Perspectives: An Interview with Nobel Laureate Jean-Marie Gustave Le Clézio.” *Journal of Shanghai Jiaotong University (Philosophy and Social Sciences)* 2 (2023): 1-13.]
- 塞缪尔·亨廷顿：《文明的冲突》，周琪等译。北京：新华出版社，2017年。
- [Huntington, Samuel. *The Clash of civilizations and the remaking of world order*, translated by Zhou Qi et al. Beijing: Xinhua Publishing House, 2017.]
- 勒克莱齐奥：《非洲人》，袁筱一译。北京：人民文学出版社，2012年。
- [Le Clézio, J.M.G. *L'Africain*, translated by Yuan Xiaoyi. Beijing: People's Literature Publishing House, 2012.]
- 勒克莱齐奥、董强：《唐诗之路》。北京：人民文学出版社，2021年。

1 参见劳伦斯·韦努蒂：“翻译研究与世界文学”，《世界文学理论读本》，大卫·达姆罗什、刘洪涛、尹星编，北京：北京大学出版社，2013年，第203-211页。

[Le Clézio, J.M.G and Dong Qiang. *Le flot de la poésie continuera de couler*. Beijing: People's Literature Publishing House, 2021.]

刘云虹、许钧：“翻译的定位与翻译价值的把握——关于翻译价值的对谈”，《中国翻译》6（2017）：54-61。

[Liu Yunhong and Xu Jun. “The Positioning of Translation and the Grasp of Translation Value—A Dialogue on the Value of Translation.” *Chinese Translators Journal* 6 (2017): 54-61.]

钱林森：“永远的行者：勒克莱齐奥与中国”，《反叛、历险与超越——勒克莱齐奥在中国的理解与阐释》，高方、许钧编。南京：南京大学出版社，2013年，第46-64页。

[Qian Linsen. “The Eternal Traveler: Le Clezio and China.” *Rebellion, Adventure and Transcendence: Le Clézio in China*, edited by Gao Fang and Xu Jun. Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 2013. 46-64.]

——：“美与刺的统一——读法国当代小说《沙漠的女儿》”，《外国文学研究》1（1984）：70-72。

[Qian Linsen. “The Unity of Beauty and Thorn - Reading the Contemporary French Novel *Le désert*.” *Foreign Literature Studies* 1 (1984): 70-72.]

保罗·利科：《保罗·利科论翻译》，章文、孙凯译。北京：生活·读者·新知三联书店，2022年。

[Ricoeur, Paul, *Sur la traduction*, translated by Zhang Wen and Sun Kai. Beijing. SDX Joint Publishing Company, 2022.]

乔治·斯坦纳：《巴别塔之后：语言与翻译面面观》，孟醒译。杭州：浙江大学出版社，2020年。

[Steiner, George. *After Babel: Aspects of language and Translation*, translated by Meng Xing. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2020.]

劳伦斯·韦努蒂：“翻译研究与世界文学”，《世界文学理论读本》，大卫·达姆罗什等编。北京：北京大学出版社，2013年。

[Venuti, Laurence. “Translation Studies and World Literature.” *Theories of World Literature. A Reader*, edited by David Damrosch, et al. Beijing: Peking UP, 2013.]

许钧：“存在、写作与创造——勒克莱齐奥访谈录”，《文艺研究》6（2016）：73-81。

[Xu Jun. “Being, Writing and Creating-An Interview with Le Clézio.” *Literature & Art Studies* 6 (2016): 73-81.]

——：“勒克莱齐奥的文学创作与思想追踪——访诺贝尔文学奖得主勒克莱齐奥”，《外国文学研究》，2（2009）：1-8。

[— . “Le Clézio’s Literary Creation and Tracing of Ideas: An Interview with Le Clezio, Nobel Laureate in Literature.” *Foreign Literature Studies* 2 (2009): 1-8.]

——：“文学翻译、文化交流与学术研究的互动——以我和勒克莱齐奥的交往为例”，《外语教学》3（2018）：71-77。

[— . “The Interaction of Literary Translation, Cultural Exchange and Scholarship: An Example of My contact with Le Clézio.” *Foreign Language Education* 3 (2018): 71-77.]

——：“文字·文学·文化——关于‘文字翻译’与‘文学翻译’”，《南京大学学报》1（1996）：168-172。

[—, “On ‘literal Translation’ and ‘Literary Translation’.” *Journal of Nanjing University (Philosophy, Humanities and Social Sciences)* 1 (1996): 168-172.

——: “关于风格再现——傅雷先生译文风格得失谈”，《外语研究》2（1986）：57-61。

[—, “On Style Reproduction: Mr. Fu Lei’s Translation Style Gains and Losses.” *Foreign Languages Research* 2 (1986): 57-61.]

许钧：《翻译论》。武汉：湖北教育出版社，2006年。

[Xu Jun. *On Translation*. Wuhan: Hubei Education Press, 2006.]

——: “尊重、交流与沟通——多元文化语境下的翻译”，《中国比较文学》3（2001）：80-90。

[—, “Respect, Exchange and Communication-Translation in a Multicultural Context.” *Comparative Literature in China* 3 (2001): 80-90.]

许钧、勒克莱齐奥：“文学的精神引导与开放的写作世界——勒克莱齐奥访谈录”，《西北工业大学学报》4（2020）：60-66。

[Xu Jun and Le Clézio. “Spiritual Guidance of Literature and the Open World of Writing: An Interview with Le Clézio.” *Journal of Northwestern Polytechnical University (Social Sciences)* 4 (2020): 60-66.]

袁筱一：“非洲法语文学与世界文学体系的变化”，《外国文学评论》3（2023）：179-192。

[Yuan Xiaoyi. “Francophone African Literature and the Changing Systems of World Literature.” *Foreign Literature Review* 3 (2023): 179-192.]

译道寻踪：许钧的翻译与翻译研究之路

Tracing the Path of Translation: Xu Jun's Journey in Translation and Translation Studies

许 方 (Xu Fang) 许 钧 (Xu Jun)

内容摘要：在近半个世纪的翻译历程中，许钧积累了丰富的翻译经验，对翻译活动有着越来越深刻的理解，提出优秀的文学翻译家应当善于发现经典、成就经典。同时，许钧注重翻译实践与翻译理论的互动，对翻译的本质特征与价值做了全面的思考与探索，强调译者应坚守伦理立场，从翻译本质出发，认识、尊重与再现不同语言与文化的差异性。在新的历史时期，许钧进一步深化对翻译的认识，认为翻译应该秉持开放的精神，发挥创造的力量，承担维护世界文化多样性的历史使命，努力促进中外文化交流与文明互鉴。

关键词：翻译；文化多样性；翻译本质；翻译价值；译学探索

作者简介：许方，华中科技大学外国语学院法语系副教授，主要研究方向为翻译学与法国文学；许钧，浙江大学文科资深教授、中华译学馆馆长，国务院学位委员会第六届、第七届外国语言文学学科评议组召集人、中国翻译协会原常务副会长、国际法语国家组织“五洲文学奖”评委，并担任 *META*、《外语教学与研究》《中国翻译》等国内外近 20 种学术刊物的编委，翻译出版法国文学与社科名著 30 余部。其著作《文学翻译批评研究》《翻译论》《文学翻译的理论与实践——翻译对话录》《翻译学概论》《傅雷翻译研究》等多次获国家与省部级优秀成果奖。

Title: Tracing the Path of Translation: Xu Jun's Journey in Translation and Translation Studies

Abstract: Throughout nearly half a century of his translation journey, Xu Jun has accumulated extensive translation experience and gained an increasingly profound understanding of translation activities. He advocates that the outstanding literary translators should excel at discovering and establishing classics. At the same time, Xu Jun places emphasis on the interaction between translation practice and translation theory. He has undertaken a comprehensive contemplation and exploration of the intrinsic features and values of translation, highlighting that the translators should adhere to ethical principles, recognize, respect, and reproduce the differences between various languages and cultures. In the new historical era, Xu

Jun further deepens his understanding of translation, maintaining that it should be carried out with an open spirit and creative force, bearing the historical mission of safeguarding the world's cultural diversity, and strive to promote cultural exchanges and mutual enlightenment between China and other countries.

Keywords: translation; cultural diversity; nature of translation; value of translation; exploration of translation studies.

Authors: **Xu Fang**, Ph.D. in French literature, is Director and Associate Professor of the French Department at the School of Foreign Languages, Huazhong University of Science and Technology (Wuhan 430074, China). Her academic research focuses on French literature and translation studies (Email: xufang1104@hust.edu.cn). **Xu Jun** is Senior Professor of Humanities and Social Science at Zhejiang University (Hangzhou 310058, China), Director of the Chinese Academy of Translation and Translation Studies, Convenor of the 6th and 7th Evaluation Groups for Foreign Language and Literature Disciplines, Academic Degrees Committee of the State Council, Standing Vice President of Translators Association of China, Judge for the Prize of the Five Continents of the Francophonie, and editorial board member of nearly 20 academic journals at home and abroad, including *META*, *Foreign Language Teaching and Research*, and *Chinese Translators Journal*. He has translated and published more than 30 French literary and social science classics. His works, such as *Studies on Literary Translation Criticism*, *On Translation Theory*, *Dialogues on the Theory and Practice of Literary Translation*, *Introduction to Translation Studies*, and *Studies on Fu Lei's Translation Works*, have won numerous national and provincial awards for outstanding achievements (Email: xujun@nju.edu.cn).

一、走向他者，发现经典，成就经典

许方：许钧教授，您好。谢谢您给我机会，一起回顾您的翻译与翻译之路，探讨您的翻译人生和译学追求。学界都知道，您于1975年2月毕业于南京解放军外国语学院法语专业，毕业后留校任教，再过半年，就整整50个春秋了。您在多个不同场合说过，在这近半个世纪的历程中，主要是做了三件事：翻译、翻译研究和翻译教学。我想知道，您是怎么走上翻译之路的。

许钧：我走上翻译之路，可以说既是偶然，也是必然。我的专业是法语，因此肯定要和各种形式的翻译打交道。但真正让我萌生文学翻译念头的，是我的法国留学生涯。1976年我到法国勃列塔尼大学留学，留学期间，我读到了很多国内无法读到的当代法国文学作品，被法国语言文学的美深深吸引。我在如饥似渴阅读这些作品的同时，也有一点遗憾：由于语言的障碍，这些作

品尚未被我的同胞们所了解。出于与更多人分享美和精神财富的希望，我萌生了翻译的念头。如果说有什么神秘力量指引我进入翻译领域，我想最重要的应该就是对语言文字的迷恋，对法国文学的喜欢。还有一个重要的原因，就是傅雷的翻译一直吸引着我。尤其是1978年秋季留学归国后，国内兴起外国文学热，傅雷翻译的许多名著，如罗曼·罗兰的《约翰克里斯朵夫》，产生了广泛的影响。我那时刚回国不久，总是有一种冲动，想像傅雷那样，把自己喜欢的法国文学作品翻译过来。真正有明确的翻译目标，开始动手做文学翻译，是因为与南京大学的钱林森老师结识，他那个时期在巴黎教授中文，听我说想翻译文学作品，他特别支持我。我和他合作翻译的第一本书，就是从外国友人那儿要来的原作，书名叫《永别了，疯妈妈》，1979年在法国出版，获得法兰西学院小说奖。这部书在1980年开始译，1982年由湖南人民出版社出版，《人民日报》《新华日报》等报刊发了书评，给了我很大的鼓励。

许方：从上个世纪70年代末开始翻译，您一发而不可收，四十余年来，前后翻译了三十多部法国文学作品和法国人文社会科学名著，近一千万字。做过翻译的人都知道，无论是文学翻译也好，还是人文社科翻译，都是非常困难的事，可以说是不可为而为之。到底是什么力量支撑着您？

许钧：翻译确实很难，但却有着不可抵挡的吸引力。读到好书，与作者相遇，是一种幸福，我称之为“历史的奇遇”。如傅雷与罗曼·罗兰相遇，李健吾与福楼拜相遇，郭宏安与加缪相遇，都是翻译史上的佳话。我在法国留学时，读过勒克莱齐奥的《诉讼笔录》，是他23岁时出版的处女作，获得勒诺多奖，可我当时基本没有读懂，不明白好在哪里。几年后，钱林森老师得到了勒克莱齐奥的新作《沙漠》，该书获1980年的保尔·莫朗文学奖。我读了以后，感觉与《诉讼笔录》是不一样的写法，有吸引人的故事情节，语言很美，节奏感很强，而且觉得思想很有批判性，于是写梗概，还试译了两章，与钱林森老师一起推荐给湖南人民出版社，1983年出版，译本名为《沙漠的女儿》。通过翻译，我对勒克莱齐奥有了越来越多的了解和理解，感觉他的作品别具一格，具有诗意。后来，我一直很关注他的作品，他有新作出版，都会寄给我，记得有一部叫《流浪的星星》，他在书的扉页赠言，还画了一颗星星。我们因翻译结缘，成了朋友，四十多年的交情，一直在延续，在加深。这应该就是一种巨大的推动力。

许方：因翻译而结缘，这确实给译者以力量。但翻译也是巨大的挑战，比如您参与翻译普鲁斯特的《追忆似水年华》，该书被译界称为天书，翻译之难可想而知。《追忆似水年华》作为意识流的开山之作，与《尤利西斯》并称为双峰，在西方文学作品中具有重要地位。在您的翻译生涯中，这部书的翻译应该具有别样的意义。首先从难度上看，这部书无疑会给您带来巨大的

障碍；其次作为译者，面对这样一部世界的经典文学作品，译介的压力肯定很大。刘云虹教授在“文学翻译生成中译者的主体化”一文中，对译者的主体化过程做了开拓性的研究，对译者的主体意识、伦理立场与创造行动做了分析。¹对于这部经典作品的翻译，您一定有很多体会与领悟，能否请您与我们做一分享？

许钧：参加翻译普鲁斯特的《追忆似水年华》，在我的文学翻译道路上确实具有特殊的意义，有很多收获。文学翻译，文本的选择特别重要，对待原文本的态度也很重要。一个译者，应该要有明确的翻译追求，坚守翻译的伦理立场。翻译具有开放性，要主动敞开自身，走向他者。翻译《追忆似水年华》，必须要深刻理解普鲁斯特的文学特质。就《追忆似水年华》而言，我们发现普鲁斯特的独特性首先表现在其对语言陌生性的追求中，这种语言的陌生性构成了所谓的“外语性”，也就是我们所说的“异质性”。这种异质性会给翻译带来挑战。面对经典，译者要无愧于经典，让自己的翻译能够参与经典的构建，去成就经典。

许方：我曾读过您的一篇文章，您明确提出，要“从文本出发，在微观的层面去发现抵抗的原因，触及抵抗与考验的张力，去观察抵抗的种种表现，在异的考验中，在语言探索的层面，去拓展翻译有可能为母语带来的新的可能性”（“在抵抗与考验中拓展新的可能”6）。您在翻译《追忆似水年华》的过程中，到底遇到了怎样的困难？

许钧：在实践的层面上，我在翻译中遇到了许多难以解决的问题：作为开意识流之先河的作家，普鲁斯特笔下那些“多层次的曲折复杂的长句”“明喻暗比的妙笔”以及独具个性的修辞风格，给翻译造成了巨大的障碍。而参加翻译全书的有十五位译者，其中大都是有经验的翻译名家。那么他们是如何处理这些障碍的呢？长句的处理有什么方法？比喻的翻译需要注意哪些要素？十五个人翻译一部作品，风格如何统一？作者的风格与译者的风格如何协调？每一个译者在处理同一类型的障碍时是否采取同样的手段？这部被法国文学界称为不可翻译的“天书”到底有哪些不可翻译的因素？面对这些困难，我们不能回避，要去思考，去寻求可能的解决途径。除了这些实践层面的问题之外，在理论的层面，也同样提出了许多值得思考的问题，如法语的句法结构和汉语的句法结构存在很大差异，那么如何传达普鲁斯特具有创造性的句法手段的表达价值呢？风格是一部文学作品的生命之源，那么到底应该如何去传达普鲁斯特的风格呢？普鲁斯特善用比喻，各种比喻中的文化因素和情感因素如何传达？这些问题，不仅是译者的问题，也同样许多专家和普通读者的问题。比如在《追忆似水年华》中文版问世后，就有不少读者

1 参见 刘云虹：“文学翻译生成中译者的主体化”，《外语教学与研究》4（2022）：590-599+640。

质疑译文风格的统一问题，也有专家提出普鲁斯特的叙事风格的传达问题。正是面对这些问题，我产生了一个大胆的想法：以国际译坛公认“极难翻译”的巨著《追忆似水年华》的第一个汉译本（译林版）为研究对象，结合中国文学翻译批评的现状，借助文学翻译研究和文学翻译批评研究的新成果，从实践出发，通过对译文多层次、多角度的评析，在研究文学翻译的基本原则和方法的同时，对文学翻译批评的基本范畴、原则和方法进行探讨，同时，为广大读者释读《追忆似水年华》这部世界名著提供新的视角。一旦从具体问题中归纳出具有普遍性的要素，便有了理论升华的基础。而从具体问题的研究中提升出的理论要素往往具有理论的启迪功能或方法论的参照意义。《文学翻译批评研究》（1992）应该说是我在这方面进行尝试的一个例证。

许方：从翻译实践中，发现问题，思考问题，寻求合乎您的翻译原则的翻译方法和策略，进而进行理论探索，形成您的翻译实践与理论互动的鲜明特色。您在很多场合说过，翻译文学经典要致力于“拓展并丰富经典的生命”（“经典的阅读、理解与阐释” 2）。但同时，您还提出文学翻译家不仅要成就经典，还要善于发现经典。在您的翻译生涯中，这样的发现多吗？

许钧：一个翻译家的价值，就像一个评论家的价值，当作者还没成名时，好的评论家能够发现作者的价值，能够对他做出非常重要的阐释，能够拓展、丰富作品的生命，让这个作家能够被发现，一个译者也同样如此，好的译者应该发掘作者。我们做文学翻译，都强调要翻译经典作品。经典有两种，一种是在文学史上已经有定论的经典作品，如我翻译的巴尔扎克的作品《贝姨》《邦斯舅舅》、雨果的《海上劳工》，参加翻译的普鲁斯特的《追忆似水年华》。这样的经典，富有价值，值得翻译，有必要时也值得重译。这些经典，都是别人发现和认定的经典，能不能自己去发现一个一流、二流作家，去发现经典作品呢？能不能从三流甚至还不入流的作家中，看到一个潜在的一流作家呢？译者应该有这样的发现，用自己的眼光去发现一流作家、经典作品。我翻译的法国文学作品，有的是公认为经典的作品，有的是老一辈学者约我翻译的具有经典地位的作品，也有相当一部分，是我在阅读法国当代文学作品中，自己发现、自己选择翻译的文学作品。我一直勉励自己，好的文学翻译家，应该努力去发现经典，发现原作的特质、价值，并通过自己的阅读、理解、阐释与翻译，去成就经典，让原作在新的文化语境中获得新的生命。

二、坚守伦理立场，维护文化多样性

许方：近半个世纪以来，您做了大量的翻译。学界都知道，您有丰富的翻译经验，对翻译有深刻的理解，您对翻译本质与翻译价值的探讨，对于我们从事翻译与翻译研究的青年学者来说，具有重要的指导意义。我在阅读您有关翻译的著述中，发现您非常强调翻译的伦理问题。您在“当下翻译研究

中值得思考的几个问题”一文中，提出了四个重要问题，其中之一就是：“翻译是否应该恪守伦理原则？”（3）关于翻译的伦理问题，您还专门与刘云虹教授有过深入的探讨，那次对谈的题目为“异的考验——关于翻译伦理的对谈”。¹能否请您讲一讲您为什么这么重视翻译的伦理问题？

许钧：谈到伦理问题，我马上会想到聂珍钊教授的《文学伦理学批评导论》。聂教授的理论有个基本的出发点，那就是文学不仅是语言的艺术，更是一种伦理行为，文学创作应该有道德立场与使命担当。聂教授在他的这部著作的第五章，专门论述了文学伦理学批评的道德传统，强调了文学批评的道德责任。²在我看来，译者在翻译活动中必须有伦理立场。从翻译活动的本质去看，翻译就是要建立自我与他者之间的关系，所以我强调，翻译应该突破自我，敞开自身，走向他者。只要与他者发生关系，就有一个对待他者、对待差异的问题。这就是一个伦理的问题。在长期的翻译活动中，我渐渐认识到不同语言与文化之间的差异性构成了翻译的必要性，那么，如何认识与对待不同语言与文化之间的差异性，这应该成为翻译的伦理研究的重要内涵与本质目标。

许方：您曾说过，翻译因异而起，为异而生。对他者的开放，对差异的尊重，对不同文化特征的尊重，在翻译中尽可能地再现不同文化的特质，构成了您所说的翻译伦理立场。您在自己的翻译中是这么去做的，同时在新的历史时期，在中国文化“走出去”的进程中，您更是强调翻译活动应该坚守伦理立场。您曾经写过一篇文章，叫做“翻译选择与文化立场——关于翻译教学的思考”。³实际上，文化立场关涉伦理立场。没有建立正确的翻译伦理观，没有对他者的尊重和了解，在翻译中就不可能建立正确的文化立场，处理好翻译有可能建立起来的文化关系。

许钧：你说得对。从事翻译活动，建立正确的翻译伦理观非常重要。翻译活动，第一个就是要处理好原作与译作的关系问题。译者，对翻译都应该有真善美的追求。但不同译者可能会有不同的追求重点。许渊冲先生做文学翻译，是把美放在第一位的。他认为，创造美，是他的追求与快乐。他坚持这样的观点，自有他的道理。但对我而言，翻译求真是第一位的。没有真，美与善都谈不上。所以，翻译中忠实问题，就像一条红线，贯穿翻译活动的历史。也像一块试金石，起着检验译者伦理立场的作用。在翻译实践中，我特别重视原作，尊重原作，我曾写过一篇文章，叫“试论译作与原作的关系”，特

1 参见刘云虹、许钧：“异的考验——关于翻译伦理的对谈”，《外国语（上海外国语大学学报）》2（2016）：70-77。

2 参见聂珍钊：《文学伦理学批评导论》，北京：北京大学出版社，2014年，第101-103页。

3 参见许钧：“翻译选择与文化立场——关于翻译教学的思考”，《中国外语》5（2021）：1+12-15。

别强调译作与原作之间应该保存其天然的血脉关系，要着力再现原作的特质。¹在翻译遇到语言和文化层面的抵抗时，不能回避，不能大而化之。做文学翻译的人，大抵都有过“抵抗”的遭遇。最常见的情形是，原作中一些鲜活而独具个性的表达，在目的语中会遭遇极力抵抗，抵抗的原因有多种：因为词汇的空缺，难以找寻到对等的表达；因为原作的表达太具异质性，难以在目标语中找到相融的可能。面对原作对目的语提出的挑战，翻译者的态度与行为便显示出各种样态，有妥协的，有任意改造的，有归化处理的。但也有接受挑战的，在目的语对原作的抵抗处，去寻找新的可能性，在异的考验中，在自我与他者的直接抵抗中，探索语言新的可能性，拓展新的表达空间。

许方：我读过您的不少译作和译学论著，可以看到，您的翻译原则与您的理论导向是完全一致的。您主编过不少译丛，从中可以发现您对于他者和差异的尊重，不仅仅表现在您的翻译方法与译作上，也体现在您对翻译文本的选择上。比如，您主编过“西方文明进程丛书”、“日常生活译丛”。从您选择推荐给中国读者的这些书中，可以看到您的初衷，那就是作为一个译者，要关注不同的文化，不同的文明，促进中外文化的交流和文明的互鉴。

许钧：刚才，我谈到译者应该坚守伦理立场。这么多年来，我对翻译的认识在不断加深。我越来越感觉到，翻译，不仅仅是两种语言之间的转换，更是不同文化的交流，具有跨文化的本质特征。有了这样的认识，我确实在选择翻译文本、组织大型译丛方面下了不少功夫。在理论的层面，我明确提出维护文化多样性，是翻译的使命。我曾写过一篇文章，题目叫“文化多样性与翻译的使命”。²文化多样性是交流、革新和创造的源泉，是人类共同遗产，对人类来讲就像生物多样性对维持生态平衡那样不可或缺。翻译是因人类相互交流的需要而生，从这个意义上说，寻求思想沟通，促进文化交流，便是翻译的目的或任务之所在。如果说翻译以克服语言的障碍、变更语言的形式为手段，以传达意义、达到理解、促进交流为目的，那么把翻译理解为一种人类跨文化的交流活动，应该说是一个正确的定位。从这一定位出发，我们便不难理解翻译在人类文化发展进程中所起的作用了。此外，维护文化多样性，建设世界和平文化，需要翻译活动所体现的开放与交流的文化心态。人类的社会始终处于不断发展的状态之中，而人类社会越发展，越体现出一种开放与交流的精神。人类社会想要走出封闭的天地，首先必须与外界进行接触，以建立起交流的关系，向着相互理解共同发展的目标前进。不同民族语言文化之间的交流，是一种需要。任何一个民族想发展，必须走出封闭的自我，不管你的文化有多么辉煌，多么伟大，都不可避免地要与其他文化进行交流，在不断碰撞中，甚至冲突中，渐渐相互理解，相互交融。而在这样一

1 参见许钧：“试论译作与原作的关系”，《外语教学与研究》1（2002）：15-21。

2 参见许钧：“文化多样性与翻译的使命”，《中国翻译》1（2005）：41-44。

个过程中，翻译始终起着重要的作用。在世界化进程不断加快的今天，我们应该关注语言问题，从跨文化交流、国际关系民主化和世界和平文化建设的高度去认识语言的多元与文化多样性的关系，去理解翻译在当今世界所肩负的历史使命。

许方：在历史发展进程中，翻译对推动文化交流确实起到很大作用。新的历史时期，中国文化走出去被提高到战略的高度。翻译活动发生了很多变化，表现在翻译的重点、翻译的方法和翻译的路径等各方面。在您看来，以前的外译中与现在的中译外，在文化交流层面，其目标是一致的吗？

许钧：你提了一个很有意义的问题。以前我们中国翻译界主要从事外译中，把外国的文学、文化、思想介绍到中国来，现在我们翻译界又主动地把中国文学、文化和思想译成外语，介绍到域外去。从路径上看，是不一样的。但是，如果我们从跨文化交流的高度去看，中国文学外译、中国文学走出去，回应的正是丰富世界文化的需求。在与刘云虹教授有关翻译伦理的对话中，我特别谈到：“文学对外译介与传播中的翻译方法问题，就其本质而言，折射的是跨文化交流中如何看待语言文化异质性、如何对待他者文化的伦理问题，非常有必要从翻译伦理的角度进行深入思考。中国文学‘走出去’不言而喻是一种跨文化交流，但这不能仅仅体现在形式上两种语言之间的转化，而要在真正承认差异、尊重差异的基础上确实树立一种双向交流的观念，这种交流既是不同文化间相互的沟通，更是不同文化间平等而长远的对话与融合。这是中国文学‘走出去’的深层次目标和意义所在，也是翻译这项跨文化交流活动的根本任务与使命所在”（刘云虹 许钧 74-75）。从本质上看，无论是翻译世界，还是翻译中国，本质的诉求是一致的，那就是维护文化多样性，让世界文化更加丰富、灿烂。

三、从翻译出发，拓展人类精神疆域

许方：您坚守翻译伦理，推动中外文学与文化交流，做了很多的工作。您刚才在谈话中，提到了勒克莱齐奥，他是2008年诺贝尔文学奖获得者。您是因为文学与他结缘的，在四十余年的交往中，你们建立了深厚的友情。而这一友情又把翻译推向了新的维度，从文学交流，到文化交流，再到精神与思想层面的交流。我读过您在北京大学外国语学院的一个演讲稿，题目为“文学翻译、文化交流与学术研究的互动——以我和勒克莱齐奥的交往为例”。您谈到，从翻译出发，可以在多个层面有所收获。¹

许钧：回顾自己走过的翻译之路，我深刻地感觉到，翻译已经融入我的生命之中。在北京大学人文工作坊谈文学翻译，我说过，翻译者是世界上最

1 参见许钧：“文学翻译、文化交流与学术研究的互动——以我和勒克莱齐奥的交往为例”，《外语教学》3（2018）：71-77。

幸运的人。我有幸翻译过巴尔扎克、雨果、普鲁斯特这样的文学大家，能有机会跟他们神交与对话，是一种幸运。通过翻译，我有机会接触到加利、勒克莱齐奥、德里达这样的政治家、文学家和哲学家，进入他们的精神世界，借助“异”之明镜照自身，认识自我，丰富自我，更是一种幸运。在多个场合，我也说过，做翻译，不能止于翻译，要去探索翻译背后丰富的世界。作为一个翻译者，我还有很多的机会去亲历、去促进一些重要的文化交流活动。比如我先后组织过莫言与勒克莱齐奥这两位诺贝尔文学奖得主的多次交流；我参加过上海世博会申办报告的翻译定稿工作，被聘为上海世博会组委会的语言顾问；我还应邀参与了南京青奥会申办报告的撰写和翻译定稿。我和我当时的法语系团队做了非常重要的工作，为南京获得青奥会的主办权做了贡献；我还应邀担任南京申办联合国教科文组织世界文学之都的顾问，为南京成功申办世界文学之都做了大量工作，为中外文学交流拓展了有益的路径。现在再回头想想四十多年来所做的翻译方面的工作，我觉得从翻译出发，会有意想不到的收获和惊喜。

许方：四十多年以来，您不断积累，不断探索，形成了鲜明的特色。早在上个世纪90年代初，刘霖就在《中国翻译》发文，题目叫“理论与实践并重——忠实与创造统一——青年翻译家许钧给我们的启示”。在这篇文章中，刘霖特别指出，您发表的不少论文“都以自己的翻译经验为基础，以自己的译作为译例，在大量的实践基础上进行理论探讨，又在理论的指导下从事实践”（44）。后来，穆雷又对您做了访谈，专门谈了“关于翻译实践与翻译研究的互动关系”。¹能否请您谈谈，这么多年来，您为什么一直坚持以实践为基础，特别看重实践与理论的互动？

许钧：原因很简单，因为翻译实践活动给我带来了许多收获。首先，从翻译实践出发，我对翻译有了越来越深刻的认识。一个做翻译的人，对翻译应该有自己的认识，要建立翻译观和翻译价值观。如果对翻译没有明确的认识，尤其对翻译价值没有深刻的理解，对翻译活动不可能有持久的投入，也不可能有自觉的追求。傅雷把翻译视作自己的生命，他翻译了罗曼·罗兰的《约翰·克里斯朵夫》和巴尔扎克的很多名著，是因为“他很早就把自己的译事与国人的自强以及民族的进步联系起来。他希望通过翻译活动振兴民族，给予国人精神上的勇力；同时，以翻译活动服务社会，推动我国的文化发展，为社会文明默默奉献”（许钧等 1）。许渊冲先生生命不息，翻译不止，也是因为他对翻译有深刻的认识与明确的追求，在他看来，翻译是创造美，是为了丰富世界文化。我从自己的翻译实践出发，一直对翻译活动的丰富性、复杂性和创造性进行思考。在这一方面，我最大的收获，是对翻译的本质特征

1 参见 穆雷、许钧：“关于翻译实践与翻译研究的互动关系——许钧教授访谈录”，《外语与外语教学》1（2006）：57-59。

和翻译的价值提出了自己的认识，对翻译做了界定。尤其是对翻译价值的探讨，应该说对深化社会对“何为译”与“译何为”的认识，起到了推进作用。

许方：确实，您对翻译的界定，已经得到了学界普遍的肯定。据我所知，《中国大百科全书》第三版发布了网络版，您是翻译学科条目的主编，其中的“翻译”这一条目，就是您撰写的。刚才您谈到您坚持翻译实践与翻译理论互动，我最近在读您主编的《文学翻译的理论与实践——翻译对话录》，您与季羨林、萧乾、叶君健、许渊冲、罗新璋等二十多位翻译家就文学翻译的基本问题，进行了探讨，可以说是对20世纪中国文学翻译做了一次梳理与总结。¹通过这部书，我们不仅可以领略到各位翻译大家的翻译艺术与精神风貌，更能看到翻译之于社会发展所起到的巨大作用，还能追踪到翻译实践问题是如何上升为翻译基本理论问题的。这部书在国内学界影响很大，前几年通过中国学术外译项目，由劳特里奇出版社于2020年出了英文版。据复旦大学陶友兰教授搜集的材料，这部书已经被国际上近百家图书馆收藏，还有美国的两所大学将该书列为翻译学科的参考书目。

许钧：谢谢你提供了有关这部书的学术影响的信息。这部书对我而言，确实具有特殊的价值。从那些老翻译家那里，我学到了很多。我之所以特别看重老翻译家们丰富的翻译经验，是因为如你所言，那是理论之源。我和刘和平教授曾结合这些老翻译家的翻译经历，对他们的翻译研究做了梳理与总结，对他们有关文学翻译的具有代表性的观点做了阐发，写了一篇文章，叫“文学翻译的经验总结与理论升华”，刊登在国际著名的翻译学杂志 *META* 上。²随着翻译之路的不断延伸，我渐渐认识到了，理论探索，不能忽视实践，更不能与实践脱节。翻译理论研究，要重视中国数千年翻译的历史，也要关注当下越来越丰富的翻译实践。实际上，我走上翻译研究之路，把翻译研究确定为自己最重要的学术方向，最直接的原因就是自己在翻译实践中遇到了很多问题，需要去寻求答案，老一辈学者的影响与指导，固然重要，但很多问题难以找到现成的答案，必须去探索。我的两部翻译批评著作《文学翻译批评研究》《文字·文学·文化——〈红与黑〉汉译研究》就是实践与理论互动的成果。我的不少理论著作，包括《翻译论》《翻译概论》，都有这样的特点。

许方：您一直努力向老一辈翻译家学习，从翻译大家那里汲取经验。同时，您也特别注重弘扬老一辈翻译家的优秀翻译传统。2018年，浙江大学成立了中华译学馆，其主要目标之一就是要弘扬翻译精神。您主编了《中华译学馆·中华翻译家代表性译文库》，旨在“展现中华翻译家的经典译文，塑

1 参见许钧等：《文学翻译的理论与实践——翻译对话录》，南京：译林出版社，2001年。

2 参见 Xu Jun and Liu Heping, “Expériences et théorisation de la traduction littéraire en Chine,” *Meta* 4 (2004): 786-804.

造中华翻译家的精神形象，深化翻译之本质的认识”（许钧，“总序”3）。纵观数千年的中华翻译史，您认为翻译具有怎样的力量？

许钧：我想，开放的精神与创造的力量，可以构成我们认识翻译、理解翻译的两个基点。在《中华译学馆·中华翻译家代表性译文库》的总序中，我强调指出：“中国的翻译史，就是一部中外文化交流、互学互鉴的历史，也是一部中外思想不断拓展、不断创新、不断丰富历史。而在这一历史进程中，一位位伟大的翻译家，不仅仅以他们精心阐释、用心传译的文本为国人打开异域的世界，引入新思想、新观念，更以他们的开放性与先锋性，在中外思想、文化、文学交流史上立下了一个个具有引领价值的精神坐标”（2）。我特别希望，我们的青年一代，要以老一辈翻译家为榜样，弘扬翻译精神，不断拓展精神疆域，驱动思想创新。

许方：谢谢您花了这么宝贵的时间，与我交流，为我解惑。最后能否请您为青年学子说一句话？

许钧：我想说，翻译是历史的奇遇，是文化的构建力量，是人类灵魂的共鸣。

Works Cited

- 刘霖：“理论与实践并重 忠实与创造统一——青年翻译家许钧给我们的启示”，《中国翻译》6（1992）：43-45。
- [Liu Mu. “Emphasis on Theory and Practice, Unity of Fidelity and Creativity: Inspiration from Young Translator Xu Jun.” *Chinese Translators Journal* 6 (1992): 43-45.]
- 刘云虹：“文学翻译生成中译者的主体化”，《外语教学与研究》4（2022）：590-599+640。
- [Liu Yunhong. “Translator’s Subjectification in the Becoming of Literary Translation.” *Foreign Language Teaching and Research* 4 (2022): 590-599+640.]
- 刘云虹、许钧：“异的考验——关于翻译伦理的对谈”，《外国语（上海外国语大学学报）》2（2016）：70-77。
- [Liu Yunhong and Xu Jun. “The Experience of the Foreign: An Interview on Translation Ethics.” *Journal of Foreign Languages* 2 (2016): 70-77.]
- 穆雷、许钧：“关于翻译实践与翻译研究的互动关系——许钧教授访谈录”，《外语与外语教学》1（2006）：57-59。
- [Mu Lei and Xu Jun. “The Interaction between Translation Practice and Translation Studies: Interview with Professor Xu Jun.” *Foreign Languages and Their Teaching* 1 (2006): 57-59.]
- 聂珍钊：《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京：北京大学出版社，2014年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. *Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism*. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- 许钧：“翻译选择与文化立场——关于翻译教学的思考”，《中国外语》5（2021）：1+12-15。
- [Xu Jun. “Choices in Translation and Cultural Position: Some Thoughts on Translation Teaching.”

Foreign Languages in China 5 (2021): 1+12-15.]

——: “在抵抗与考验中拓展新的可能——关于翻译与语言的问题”，《语言战略研究》5 (2019): 5-6。

[—: “Expanding New Possibilities in Resistance and Testing: Issues Regarding Translation and Language.” *Chinese Journal of Language Policy and Planning* 5 (2019): 5-6.]

——: “总序”，《中华译学馆·中华翻译家代表性译文库·朱生豪卷》，许钧、郭国良主编。杭州：浙江大学出版社，2019年，第1-4页。

[—: “General Preface.” *Chinese Academy of Translation and Translation Studies: The Representative Translated Works Library of Chinese Translators. Vol. Zhu Shenghao*, edited by Xu Jun and Guo Guoliang. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2019. 1-4.]

——: “文学翻译、文化交流与学术研究的互动——以我和勒克莱齐奥的交往为例”，《外语教学》3 (2018): 71-77。

[—: “The Interaction of Literary Translation, Cultural Exchange, and Academic Research: A Case Study of My Interaction with Le Clézio.” *Foreign Language Education* 3 (2018): 71-77.]

——: “试论译作与原作的关系”，《外语教学与研究》1 (2002): 15-21。

[—: “On the Relationship between Translation and Original Works.” *Foreign Language Teaching and Research* 1 (2002): 15-21.]

——: “文化多样性与翻译的使命”，《中国翻译》1 (2005): 41-44。

[—: “Promoting Cultural Diversity as a Mission of Translation.” *Chinese Translators Journal* 1 (2005): 41-44.]

——: “经典的阅读、理解与阐释——《法国文学经典译丛》代总序”，《法国文学经典译丛》，许钧编。南京：南京大学出版社，2017年，第1-3页。

[—: “The Reading, Understanding, and Interpretation of Classics: General Preface to *Collection of Translations of French Literary Classics*.” *Collection of Translations of French Literary Classics*, edited by Xu Jun. Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 2017. 1-3.]

——: “当下翻译研究中值得思考的几个问题”，《当代外语研究》3 (2017): 1-5+111+110。

[—: “Several Issues Worth Considering in the Translation Study at Present.” *Contemporary Foreign Language Studies* 3 (2017): 1-5+111+110.]

许钧等：《文学翻译的理论与实践——翻译对话录》。南京：译林出版社，2001年。

[Xu Jun et al. *Dialogues on the Theory and Practice of Literary Translation*. Nanjing: Yilin Publishing House, 2001.]

——: 《傅雷翻译研究》。南京：译林出版社，2016年。

[—: *Studies on Fu Lei's Translation Works*. Nanjing: Yilin Publishing House, 2016.]

Xu Jun and Liu Heping. “Expériences et théorisation de la traduction littéraire en Chine.” *Meta* 4 (2004): 786-804.

共同文化：走出文化危机的必由之路——重读《文化观念》

The Common Culture as a Way out of Cultural Crises: *The Idea of Culture* Revisited

殷企平 (Yin Qiping)

内容摘要：关于伊格尔顿的《文化观念》，有两个相关问题仍然值得深入探讨。其一，贯穿该书的主线是什么？其二，作者一方面强调“共同文化”，另一方面又声称文化“变得傲慢与自负了”，其间的张力该作何解释？对于此，很多人的解读是：文化已经变得不那么重要了。情况果真如此吗？要回答这一问题，我们还得从“文化危机”说起。虽然伊格尔顿的“共同文化”一说得益于威廉斯，但是伊格尔顿进一步把“趣味”元素揉进了共同文化理论。他把“趣味”等同于“信仰和行动的公共性”，正是这种公共精神，构成了共同文化的精髓。

关键词：《文化观念》；伊格尔顿；共同文化；文化危机；公共精神

作者简介：殷企平，博士，杭州师范大学外国语学院教授，主要研究方向为英国文学与西方文论。

Title: The Common Culture as a Way out of Cultural Crises: *The Idea of Culture* Revisited

Abstract: Regarding Terry Eagleton's *The Idea of Culture*, two issues are still worth exploring. First, what is the main thread that runs throughout the book? Second, in what way can we explain the tension between the "common culture," which Eagleton emphasizes on the one hand, and the culture that Eagleton describes as having grown "immodest and overweening" on the other hand? Many people have misinterpreted Eagleton's views and claimed that, to him, the importance of culture is on the wane. Is that true? In order to answer that question, we need to deem as a point of entry what Eagleton calls "culture in crisis." Although his idea of "common culture" is derived from Raymond Williams, Eagleton has further developed the theory of common culture into which he has incorporated the element of "taste." He sees taste as tantamount to the "commonality of belief and action," and it is precisely this kind of public spirit that constitutes the quintessence of common culture.

Keywords: *The Idea of Culture*; Terry Eagleton; Common Culture; Culture in Crisis; public spirit

Author: Yin Qiping, Ph.D., is Professor at the School of International Studies, Hangzhou Normal University (Hangzhou 311121, China). His research interest is British literature and Western literary theories (Email: qipyin@hotmail.com).

在文化观念史上，伊格尔顿（Terry Eagleton）的《文化观念》（*The Idea of Culture*, 2000）堪称集大成之作。虽然学界对于它已有不少专论，但是有两个相关问题仍然值得深入探讨。

其一，贯穿该书的主线是什么？

其二，作者把文化的“傲慢与自负”放在全书压轴的位置，这该作何解释？

初涉《文化观念》者，大都有枝蔓丛生的印象，一时摸不着方向。然而，细细品读之后，我们就会发现全书有一条主线，它围绕着两大话题而展开：1）文化陷入了何种危机？2）如何走出危机？全书共分五章，第一章“文化的不同说法”（*Versions of Culture*）可看作楔子，随及引出的第二章“危机中的文化”（*Culture in Crisis*）和第三章“文化战争”（*Culture Wars*）对应上述第一个话题，而第四章“文化与自然”（*Culture and Nature*）和第五章“走向共同文化”（*Towards a Common Culture*）则对应上述第二个话题。

从上述主线可见，《文化观念》的诞生是为了应对伊格尔顿所说的“文化危机”，而应对策略则是上文所说的“共同文化”。问题也就来了：《文化观念》的结尾处在强调“共同文化”的同时，又声称文化“变得傲慢与自负了”，并主张“把它放回本位”（131）¹。此言一出，引起了很多反响，不过最多的是一种误读——很多人的解读是：文化已经变得不那么重要了。情况果真如此吗？要回答这一问题，我们还得从“文化危机”说起。

一、从“文化危机”到“文化战争”

《文化观念》第二章的标题就是“危机中的文化”。在该章第一段中，作者挑明了全书的核心观点：“本书的论点是：我们被夹在了两种文化观念的中间，一种大而无当，另一种僵化刻板，因而当务之急是两者都要超越”（32）。为什么会出现这一情况呢？

伊格尔顿所处的时代，可以用“文化热”来形容：人文社科领域，几乎没有一块未被“文化话语”冲击的地方。乍一看去，这似乎是一种喜人的现象。然而，凸显二律背反意味的新问题来了：“文化热”大潮之下，是五花八门的新理论、新话语——文化“吃香”，因而谁都想顶着它的名分。可想而知，这会

1 本文有关《文化观念》的引文均来自 Terry Eagleton, *The Idea of Culture* (Oxford: Blackwell, 2000)。以下引文仅标注页码，不再一一说明。

带来很多问题，其中之一是文学批评会遭受伤害。恰如聂珍钊先生早就指出的那样，一些“打着文化批评（……）旗号的批评，往往颠倒了理论与文学之间的依存关系，割裂了批评与文学之间的内存联系”，只注重“对某个文化命题的求证，造成理论与实际的脱节”（聂珍钊 44）。另一个大问题则已由马海良先生所指出：“‘文化热’隐含的内在矛盾”导致了“贯穿于现代时期”的“文化危机”，后者“表现为现当代主流文化话语对文化的历史性、实践性、生产性以及政治性的漠视和掩盖”（113）。由于文化“吃香”，因此谁都拿它当大旗，而当它指称一切时，自然就会变得空洞。关于这一点，不少研究伊格尔顿的学者都已经发表了见解，其中以马海良先生的阐释最为简明：“现代‘文化’概念从替换‘文明’开始，一路不断繁殖，到后现代主义时期膨胀成为包揽一切的最高能指，伊格尔顿称之为‘唯文化论’或‘文化主义’（culturalism）。当‘文化’成为一个无所不能容纳的概念时，也就成了一个大而无当的没有意义内涵的空洞符号”（马海良 116）。不无悖论意义的是，此处所说的“包揽一切”往往走向其反面：各路话语都顶着“文化”的名头，看似后者包揽了一切，实则此文化非彼文化，每一种“文化”都很狭窄。这就是上引文字中“文化主义”的要害所在，或者说是后现代主义的要害所在。这一点已由刘静和冯伟说得很清楚：“进入后现代，文化以无所不在的方式成为一种独特的存在（……）后现代主义是一种文化主义，首先是因为它拒绝承认不同种族在社会上和经济上所共有的东西比文化差异更为重要。而正是这些东西关乎着政治解放。后现代的偏见不断地腐蚀、破坏作为对文明的批评的文化。文化概念作为批评或乌托邦的维度迅速地衰落”（刘静 冯伟 38-39）。换言之，“‘文化’由曾经俯瞰和统辖整个人间事务的第一原子分裂为‘不同的’差异性形态，‘文化’裂变为‘各种文化’”（马海良 116），这是当年阿诺德乃至威廉斯等人都未曾料到的新问题。

应该说，上述新问题——亦即文化危机——产生的原因很复杂。除上面已经提到的以外，“文化”一词本身的特殊性也是重要原因之一。就像很多学者指出的那样，“文化”是“英语语言中两三个最复杂的单词之一”，而且“很少有比‘文化’更成问题的词语了”。¹从词源学的角度看，它历经千变万化，最终“把马克思所说的经济基础与上层建筑统一在了单个概念之中”（1-2）。换言之，“文化”一词经过长时期的演变，派生出了许多复杂的内涵和外延。更复杂的是，它最初的语义就呈复合态势，而且是复合了二元对立的内涵：“如果文化最初的意义是耕作，那么它既暗示着规范，又暗示着自然生长”（4）。随着语义演变的深入，这种二元对立的趋势也愈演愈

1 参见 Raymond Williams, *Keywords: A Vocabulary of Culture and Society*, Flamingo: Fontana Press, 1983, 87; Terry Eagleton, *The Idea of Culture*, Oxford: Blackwell, 2000, 1; Patrick Fuery and Nick Mansfield, *Cultural Studies and the New Humanities: Concepts and Controversies*, Melbourne: Oxford University Press, 1997, xviii.

烈，就如伍晓明所说，文化观念包含了“一系列二元对立的解构”（伍晓明 122）。正因为如此，《文化观念》从篇首就开始分析“文化”一词所含的二元对立式涵义——这些涵义成双成对，却又互相矛盾。略举数端如下：

乡村生活 (rural existence)	vs	城市生活 (urban existence)
自然生长 (natural growth)	vs	约束管理 (regulation)
养猪业 (pig-farming)	vs	毕加索艺术 (Picasso)
耕种土地 (tilling the soil)	vs	分裂原子 (splitting the atom)
制作 (making)	vs	被制作 (being made)
率性 (spontaneity)	vs	理性 (rationality)
自我实现 (self-realization)	vs	自我克服 (self-overcoming)
高级官能 (higher faculties)	vs	低级官能 (lower faculties)
实际行成的 (what has actually evolved) vs 应该形成的 (what ought to evolve) (1-6)		

以上列表只反映了文化观念丰富内涵中的一小部分，不过它们都具有代表性。伊格尔顿所分析的内涵都具有二元性，或者如他自己所说的“两面性” (facing both ways)：“文化作为一个词语具有两面性。它还暗示我们自身内部就可分成两个部分，一部分行使培养和冶炼的功能，而另一部分则构成了供冶炼的原材料” (5)。此处所说“行使培养和冶炼的功能”就是上表中的“高级官能”，而“供冶炼的原材料”则是与之对应的“供冶炼的原材料”。

正是因为上述繁冗驳杂的语义内涵，“文化”一词即便暂时不受历史、社会语境变化的影响，也会因其内在张力（不同乃至相反的语义彼此互动或博弈）而处于一种动态之中。更确切地说，“文化”一词从一开始就蕴含着不调和的种子。面对这些不调和的种子，伊格尔顿立下了两大功劳：1）从错综复杂的线索中理出了一个具有共性的头绪，即（如上文中所暗示的那样）众多语义彼此间都有一种对立统一的辩证关系；2）在扑簌迷离的线索中导出主线索，即勾勒出了“文化”与“文明”分道扬镳的轨迹。¹然而，理清这些头绪，并不能让人一劳永逸。伊格尔顿清楚地看到，“文化”概念并非生活在真空当中，它的“每一次使用都反映了历史语境对‘意义’的调整需求”（马海良 115）。由于前文所述的新历史语境，即各路话语 / 理论争相标举“文化”大旗的情境，因此出现了新的文化危机²，其“征兆表现为对历史条件的掩盖、意

1 参见 殷企平编：“总序”，《文化观念流变中的英国文学典籍研究》（6卷本），上海：上海外语教育出版社，2020年。

2 笔者此处之所以用了“新的文化危机”，是因为文化史上其实危机不断。伊格尔顿本人也承认，“宣称文化观念如今正处于危机之中，这是很危险的，因为它何时不在危机之中呢？”参见 Terry Eagleton, *The Idea of Culture*, Oxford: Blackwell, 2000, 37.

图与效果的冲突和自我涂写与抹除的矛盾”（马海良 115）。这一新的历史条件，反过来会激活我们前面所说“不调和的种子”——虽然各类理论都标举“文化”，但是每类理论（以及操弄理论的各种势力）其实有不同的文化认同，或者说只认同了文化观念众多内涵中的某些部分，那就必然会带来新的“不调和”。正是在这一意义上，笔者认同韩伟和徐蔚两位学者对《文化观念》的解读，即“文化的危机是文化认同的危机”（韩伟 徐蔚 11）。可能也正是因为看到了这一点，伊格尔顿才在第一章中大书特书“文化的不同说法”，以此为其后讲危机的两章做铺垫，进而为最后一章（讲如何走出危机）埋下伏笔，也就是为全书奠定基础。

上述危机一直呈愈演愈烈的趋势，以致伊格尔顿只能专辟一章（第三章），并冠以“文化战争”的标题，以显示其激烈程度。该章开宗明义：“‘文化战争’这个短语暗示混战，即民粹主义者与精英主义者之战、经典监护人与**差异**¹信奉者之战，以及已故白种男性²与被不公平地边缘化者之间的白热战”（51）。此处须特别留意的是“差异”一词：参加混战的“文化斗士”其实是各自为战，各为其“主”（各自不同的文化主张）。用韩伟和徐蔚的话说，伊格尔顿敏锐地发现“各个阶层、各个民族对文化理解的差异导致了文化和政治的对抗”（韩伟 徐蔚 11）。当然，导致这场混战的还有不同性别对文化理解的差异，甚至有不同性取向者之间的差异——上引文字中的“被不公平地边缘化者”（the unjustly marginalized）就包括了女权主义者和“酷儿理论”（Queer theory）的拥趸们。显然，这些不同的文化主张已经被注入了政治含义，或者说已经被政治化了。

使上述情形更为复杂化的是，伊格尔顿还发现“文化战争”不仅发生在不同性别、阶级和种族之间，而且还发生在“大写文化”（Culture）与“小写文化”（culture）之间。所谓“小写文化”，指的是某一种具体的文化形态，如女权主义文化和精英主义等。至于“大写文化”，伊格尔顿第一次在书中使用它时，称其为“浪漫主义、前马克思主义的名称，意在批判早期工业资本主义”（10）。在其后的阐释中，伊格尔顿又强调“大写文化”其实就相当于传统意义上的“文化”（culture），而“小写文化”则相当于“一种文化”（a culture），前者是比后者“更博大的、无所不包的形态”（38）。这种博大而无所不包的“大写文化”跟当年阿诺德等人的文化理想相吻合，其初衷是超越一切，超越任何狭小的阶级、种族、性别和宗派利益，也就是超越任何“一种文化”，可是事与愿违，它不幸沦落到了无法对任何“一种文化”言说的境地，难怪伊格尔顿又称其为“无文化可言”（cultureless）：“大写文化的问题是它竟无文化可言：它的价值观不为任何具体生活形态所采纳；干脆地

1 原文 difference 为斜体，故译文用黑体与之相对应。

2 “已故白种男性”原文为 dead white males，常用来暗讽占据经典地位的都是些男性白种人，而且都已过世，亦即喻其性别歧视、种族歧视和僵化过时。

说，不为人类的任何实际生活所采纳”（53）。假如这一问题仅仅停留在学术层面，那么它还不至于成为燃眉之急，但是在当今世界，它已然成为一个严峻的现实问题：

然而，大写文化与小写文化之间的争执，不再仅仅是一场有关定义的争战，而且是一种全球性的冲突。它事关现实政治，而不只牵涉学术。它不单单是司汤达与塞恩菲尔德之间的争斗¹，也不仅仅是在英语系走廊上研究弥尔顿诗歌尾韵的那些家伙与专写手淫的那些聪明年轻人之间的争吵²，而是新千年世界政治格局的组成部分。我们将会看到，就政治而言，尽管文化不是至高无上的，但是它却与我们的世界息息相关——在这个世界上，三个最富有者的财富相当于六亿个赤贫者财富的总和。文化战争关注的是种族清洗这类问题，而不是拉辛³与肥皂剧孰优孰劣这样的问题，因而是非常要紧的。（51）

伊格尔顿此处用了“要紧”一词，这说明他虽然把“文化战争”看作一种“混战”（详见本段的上文），却很重视后者关注的现实问题，或者说他也要解决这些问题，并视之为文化所面临的新任务。有趣的是，他把文化承担新任务这一现象描绘为“文化膨胀”（the inflation of culture）：“文化膨胀是世俗化时代故事的一部分，就像文学那样——自阿诺德以降，它居然率先承担起了伦理、思想乃至政治方面的重任！这些任务先前是由更偏重技术和实用的话语来承担的”（40）。须说明的是，此处的“文化膨胀”与前文所说“文化”概念的膨胀（即变成包揽一切的最高能指）既有联系又有不同，后者侧重概念内涵的过度扩张，而前者则强调文化承担的各类新任务，包括政治任务。

我们不妨把上述现象称为文化的“政治转向”。用伊格尔顿的话说，“文化已经具有了一种新的政治重要性”（131）。从伊格尔顿的总体思想来看，他是认可这种转向的，但是他同时又面临如下困境：在名目林立的文化理论中，有没有一种理论能脱颖而出，引导世人既真正承担起政治重任，又不至于陷入上述混战呢？我们将在下一小节对接这一话题。

二、走向共同文化

该怎样走出上述文化危机（“文化战争”只是它的一种激烈形式）呢？根据伊格尔顿的分析，“小写文化”显然是无能为力的，那么“大写文化”呢？前文提到，“大写文化”志在超越任何阶级、种族、性别和宗派的狭隘利益，但

1 司汤达（Stendhal），原名 Marie-Henri Beyle，法国小说家；塞恩菲尔德（Jerome Allen Jerry Seinfeld），美国好莱坞喜剧演员、剧作家、电视与电影制片人。伊格尔顿用他俩来代表经典艺术与通俗艺术之争。

2 “聪明年轻人”原文为 bright young things（可直译为“聪明而年轻的东西”），含讥讽的意味。

3 拉辛（Jean Baptiste Racine），法国剧作家、诗人。

是它同样无所作为。用伊格尔顿的原话说，因为“大写文化”“无权过问人间烟火”（has no title to intervene in sublunary affairs），所以它“救不了我们”：

“大写的文化之所以拯救不了我们，是因为它其实并不认为自己受历史条件限制，因而也就无权过问人间烟火”（86）。此处所谓“不受历史条件限制”，就是马海良先生所说的“现当代主流文化话语对文化的历史性、实践性、生产性以及政治性的漠视和掩盖”¹，而这一状况的“根源在于资本主义制度的固有矛盾”（马海良 113）。既然“大写文化”无所作为的根源在于资本主义，那么要走出文化危机，还是要从批判资本主义入手，而伊格尔顿的思路也是这样展开的。这一点在刘静和冯伟的笔下有过较好的解读：

威廉斯时期文化的政治正在演变为文化政治，进而可能堕入文化取代政治的意识形态陷阱。面对这种理论迷失，伊格尔顿始终保持着清醒的头脑，批判文化主义和文化相对主义的种种弊端，揭示后现代资本主义社会中文化的地位和作用，指出文化在后现代的过度膨胀掩盖了其无力的表现。在他看来，文化不足以作为政治的替代来行使政治批评功能，文化的自大具有严重的后果，摆正文化的位置成为当今理论研究刻不容缓的任务。（刘静 冯伟 37）

值得注意的是，上引文字中有“文化的自大”一语。确实，伊格尔顿在《文化观念》的结尾处就是这么说的。我们前面已经引用了该书的倒数第三句，即“文化已经具有了一种新的政治重要性”，而其后的两句是这样写的：“但是它同时也变得傲慢与自负了。在承认它具有意义的同时，是我们把它放回本位的时候了”（131）。本文引言部分中已经提到，学界不少人对这段话有误解，把它等同于文化位置的贬低。这难道真是伊格尔顿的本意吗？

诚然，把文化的“傲慢与自负”放在全书压轴的位置，这似乎是要铁板钉钉，至少是语出惊人。然而，我们仍须问一句：这话是针对什么讲的？是在什么语境下讲的？首先，它是作为第五章（也作为全书）结束语讲的，而这一章的标题是“走向共同文化”。就行文逻辑而论，起点题作用的自然是相关章节的标题，而该章居于压轴位置的语句自然是要为所在章节题目服务的。进一步说，“走向共同文化”作为《文化观念》全书的压轴章，其重要地位不言而喻，那么它用来压轴的最后两句——“但是它同时也变得傲慢与自负了。在承认它具有意义的同时，是我们把它放回本位的时候了”——必然是服务于全章中心论点的，即提倡共同文化。换言之，“共同文化”与“傲慢自负的文化”之间形成了一种张力，其间正是众多关于文化的“不同说法”及其相关危机/混战。这一形式上的张力本身就在传达一个信息，即共同文化将要战胜自大的文化，从而走出全书所分析的文化危机。从行文手

1 详见本文第一小第二段。

段来看，另一个文本细节也值得推敲：上引“变得傲慢与自负”一句其实又受到了其后（即最后）一句的限定——作者主张把文化“放回本位”，而这放回本位的文化就是共同文化，是与自大的文化相对立的。不仅如此，限制“变得傲慢与自负”这一句的还有其上文——同一段的首句和第二句是这样写的：“文化是我们赖以生活的一切。在很大程度上，它还是我们为之生活的一切”（131）。还有比这更强调文化重要性的吗？

由此可见，伊格尔顿在书尾提出“傲慢自负的文化”一说，丝毫没有贬低文化重要性的意思。那么，他为什么要那样说呢？学界炒作“傲慢自负的文化”一说的人们还常常拿伊格尔顿的另一本书《文化》（*Culture*, 2016）说事，该书的结语部分有一个小标题，叫作“文化的傲慢”（*The Hubris of Culture*）。事实上，这一标题是有歧义的。我们应该细究的是，伊格尔顿是在说文化本身的傲慢呢，还是某些文化工作者的傲慢？抑或是某种文化理论及其拥趸的傲慢？我们不妨来看一下《文化》的具体文字。就在以“文化的傲慢”为题的结语中，伊格尔顿一上来就说：“文学批评家们一直对自己的重要性存疑”（Eagleton, *Culture* 149）。此处的“文学批评家”主要指教授文化知识的大学教师，他们对自己的重要性都存疑，难道会傲慢吗？紧跟着上一句，伊格尔顿又这样说：“文学应对的是人类现实中最根本的问题，这是不可否认的”（Eagleton, *Culture* 149）。这分明是强调了文化——文学是文化的核心部分——的重要性，那么“傲慢”又从何谈起呢？到了第三句，我们才看清楚：“自从文学作品的研究抛弃了公共领域，躲进了学术界，它就成了次要活动，这种边缘化的程度使人不难想象大学文学系正在成为明日黄花（确实，整个艺术人文学科都如此）”（Eagleton, *Culture* 149）。原来伊格尔顿是在批评那些抛弃了公共领域的人文社科工作者！伊格尔顿用上述三句话，揭示了一个具有悖论意义的现象：一方面，许多文化工作者“躲在象牙塔里，无视普通读者，不屑于构建公共领域”（李睿 殷企平 62-63），因而他们是傲慢的；另一方面，他们又是孤独的、缺乏自信的——由于他们躲在了象牙塔里，因此就陷入孤立，自然也就有了“对自己的重要性都存疑”一说。

《文化》中批判的“傲慢”，早在《文化观念》中就遭到批判了。前文述及的各类“小写文化”大都有傲慢的毛病，大都躲在象牙塔里，不屑于构建公共领域。它们之所以陷入混战，是因为它们拒绝承认“共有的东西比文化差异更为重要”¹。作为一个有人类大同理想的马克思主义者，伊格尔顿必然想超越导致文化危机 / 战争的差异，必然要寻求走出危机的文化策略。那么，貌似具有超越性的“大写文化”是否可行呢？遗憾的是，它也无济于事，其原因是它“不食人间烟火”，或者说“并不认为自己受历史条件限制”²。须顺带提一句：不食人间烟火，也是一种傲慢。

1 详见本文第一节第二段和第五段。

2 参见本节第一段。

正是鉴于“大写文化”和“小写文化”都难有作为的情况，伊格尔顿把目光投向了共同文化。作为一个术语，“共同文化”是威廉斯（Raymond Williams）首先提出来的。后者在1958年分别发表论文“文化是普通的”（“Culture Is Ordinary”）和专著《文化与社会》（*Culture and Society*），并在里面都阐述了他的共同文化观。在《文化是普通的》一文中，他这样说道：“在下半个世纪中，我们社会的核心问题是如何使用新资源来营造一种良性的共同文化”（Williams, “Culture Is Ordinary” 17）。在《文化与社会》中，上述“核心问题”更凸显出迫切性，被摆在了人类生死存亡的高度：“我们需要一种共同文化，不是为了有一个抽象原则，而是因为没有它，我们就无法生存”（Williams, *Culture and Society* 336）。在威廉斯看来，共同文化跟“共同体”（community）、“沟通交流”（communication）和思想/知识的“传播”（transmission）息息相关：

〔……〕传播永远是一种奉献〔……〕它不是要控制，而是要沟通，是要让人采纳和响应。人们是否积极采纳你所传播的东西，是否踊跃响应，则取决于是否有一个有效的体验共同体。可以肯定，这种交流的质量又取决于人们是否认可实际的平等。形形色色的不平等分裂了我们的社会，从而使人们很难有效地沟通交流，甚至无法交流。（Williams, *Culture and Society* 336）

上引文字中的“体验共同体”（community of experience）显然强调了文化实践的物质性、历史性和普遍性，或者说体现了马克思主义的历史唯物主义思想。有意思的是，伊格尔顿从中找到了共同文化的成因和立足依据。《文化观念》第四章“文化与自然”的结尾是这样写的：

一种共同文化之所以能够形成，只是因为我们的身体大致属于相同的种类，因而一种共性有赖于另一种共性。就像马克思在青年时期所意识到的那样，即便我们在作为个体时，身体就带有社会烙印，而且比文化的烙印更深。当然，人的身体因历史、性别、种族、体能等方面的不同而不同，但是他们在语言、劳动和性征等方面的性能则没有区别，这些性能使他们一开始就进入了一种彼此相连的关系，一种具有潜在共性的关系。后现代主义者鼓吹人的身体是后天构造而成的，这已经成了一种迷信。狂热崇拜这一观点的人虽然在批判先天论时显得很聪明，却与放弃抵抗资本主义的那些人沆瀣一气——他们抛弃的是与资本主义进行全球性对抗的政治观，而这恰恰发生在一个资本主义寻求全球性霸权的时代，一个全球性霸权政治比以往任何时候都更咄咄逼人的时代。（111）

这段文字表明，共同文化赖以立足的基础是人的自然属性。前文提到，后现代文化理论的拥趸们是否定人类自然属性/共性的，他们眼里只有差异和个性，而根本看不到人类在身体构造、语言、劳动和性征等方面的共性。假如他们的谬见只是停留在学术定义层面，那么其危害性还不至于很严重，但是他们正好跟资本主义的全球性政治霸权形成了一种共谋关系，因此已经到了非反抗不可的程度。伊格尔顿敏锐地捕捉到了问题的症结，因此提出了建设共同文化的目标，并为此奠定了理论基础，可谓功莫大焉。还得顺带提一句：在本文引言部分，笔者把《文化观念》第四章和第五章一一对应于“如何走出危机”这一话题，这种对应关系由本段论述可见一斑。更确切地说，第四章为第五章中提出“共同文化”做了准备。

虽然伊格尔顿的“共同文化”一说得益于威廉斯，但是他并未停留在同一水平。这一点已经由马海良先生点明：“伊格尔顿更进一步的地方在于，他借用马克思的经济生产理论，以文学生产为个案，提出别具新意的文化生产理论。文化的历史性、物质性和实践性在伊格尔顿的理论建构中被综合描述为一种‘生产性’”（马海良 117）。换言之，“历史唯物主义的生產方式理论是他谋求走出文化危机的可靠资源；在他看来，直至今天的文化危机，其最大的根源是资本主义的整体生产方式及其文化生产方式”，而“解决文化危机的关键是解决文化生产资料所有权的问题，推行社会主义的物质实践”（马海良 118）。我们还须补充一点：伊格尔顿比威廉斯更进一步的地方，还在于他把“趣味”元素揉进了共同文化理论。下面这段论述可以为证：

威廉斯的共同文化理论〔……〕不会受到激进主义杂糅论者和自由主义多元论者无保留的欢迎，这是因为它必然需要一种信仰和行动的公共性，而这几乎是不合他们趣味的。威廉斯的立场是一个悖论：这种复杂的文化发展的条件，只有通过政治上确保某种手段才能设定——他把后者相当含糊地称作“共同体手段”，而实际上他指的就是社会主义的公共机构。这样做就肯定需要公共的信仰、承诺和实践。只有通过充分的民主参与，包括调节物质生产的民主制度，才能充分开放民主参与的通道，从而充分表达这种文化的多元性。简而言之，要确立真正的文化多元主义，就需要齐心协力的社会主义行动。当代文化主义未能明白的，恰恰是这一要点。（121-122）

由此可见，伊格尔顿把趣味（见以上引文第二行）等同于“信仰和行动的公共性”，或者说“社会主义行动”所体现的“齐心协力”，也就是他在许多著述中强调的“公共精神”。¹正是这种公共精神，构成了共同文化的精髓。

1 参见 殷企平：“走向公共精神：伊格尔顿的趣味观”，《外国文学》6（2022）：71-80。

《文化观念》发表于二十年前，可是它如今读来仍然非常亲切。谓其亲切，是因为文化危机仍然存在，文化战争仍硝烟弥漫，资本主义全球性霸权仍在作祟，而共同文化仍不失为最佳解药。

Works Cited

- Eagleton, Terry. *Culture*. New Haven and London: Yale UP, 2016.
- . *The Idea of Culture*. Oxford: Blackwell, 2000.
- Fuery, Patrick and Nick Mansfield. *Cultural Studies and the New Humanities: Concepts and Controversies*. Melbourne: Oxford UP, 1997.
- 韩伟、徐蔚：“文化的危机与弥合——读伊格尔顿的《文化的观念》”，《文艺批评》1（2010）：8-12。
- [Han Wei and Xu Wei. “The Crisis and Bridging of Culture: Reading Eagleton’s *The Idea of Culture*.” *Literary Criticism* 1 (2010): 8-12.]
- 李睿、殷企平：“‘共同体’与外国文学研究——殷企平教授访谈录”，《复旦外国语言文学论丛》2（2021）：59-65。
- [Li Rui and Yin Qiping. “‘Community’ and Foreign Literature Studies: An Interview of Professor Yin Qiping.” *Fudan Foreign Language and Literature Forum* 2 (2021): 59-65.]
- 刘静、冯伟：“摆正文化的位置——伊格尔顿的文化观探析”，《理论月刊》2（2018）：37-42。
- [Liu Jing and Feng Wei. “Correcting the Position of Culture: An Analysis of Eagleton’s Cultural View.” *Theory Monthly* 2 (2018): 37-42.]
- 马海良：“伊格尔顿批评理论的文化主题”，《文艺理论研究》2（2014）：113-122。
- [Ma Hailiang. “The Cultural Theme in Terry Eagleton’s Critical Theory.” *Theoretical Studies in Literature and Art* 2 (2014): 113-122.]
- 聂珍钊：《文学伦理学批评及其它》。武汉：华中师范大学出版社，2012年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. *Ethical Literary Criticism and Others*. Wuhan: Central China Normal UP, 2012.]
- Williams, Raymond. *Culture and Society: 1780-1950*. New York: Anchor Books, 1960.
- . “Culture Is Ordinary.” *The Raymond Williams Reader*, edited by John Higgins. Oxford: Blackwell, 2001. 10-24.
- . *Keywords: A Vocabulary of Culture and Society*. Flamingo: Fontana Press, 1983.
- 伍晓明：“论伊格尔顿的文化观”，《浙江社会科学》4（2020）：122-127。
- [Wu Xiaoming. “Eagleton on Culture.” *Zhejiang Social Sciences* 4 (2020): 122-127.]
- 殷企平：《文化观念流变中的英国文学典籍研究》（6卷本）。上海：上海外语教育出版社，2020年。
- [Yin Qiping. *British Literature midst Changes in the Idea of Culture* (6 volumes). Shanghai: Shanghai Foreign Language Education Press, 2020.]
- ：“走向公共精神：伊格尔顿的趣味观”，《外国文学》6（2022）：71-80。
- [—, “Towards Public Spirit: Eagleton’s Views on Taste.” *Foreign Literature* 6 (2022): 71-80.]

安井息轩《左传辑释》的成书及其阐释特征

The Completion of *The Compilation and Interpretation of The Zuo Commentary* by Sokken Yasui and Its Hermeneutic Characteristics

陈彦辉 (Chen Yanhui)

内容摘要：《左传辑释》是日本明治时期安井息轩汇集众家之说对《春秋》经文和传文进行精心注解的一部重要著作。安井息轩通过近二十年的收集文献、深入研读，最终完成此书，希望通过经义的探究能够经世致用、治世济众。安井息轩《左传辑释》详于传而略于经，重视考证，对于公羊、谷梁派的观点不予采纳，对历代学者的研究成果，本着实事求是的原则，择其善者而从之。《左传辑释》博采众长、断以独见，呈现出广征博引、断以独见、考论结合的阐释特征，在春秋左传学研究史上具有重要的地位和影响。

关键词：日本汉学；安井息轩；《左传辑释》；左传学；

作者简介：陈彦辉，广东外语外贸大学中国语言文化学院教授，主要研究方向为中华文化国际传播。本文为2022年广东省哲学社会科学规划项目“春秋行人与战国策士辞令比较研究”【项目批号：GD22CZW02】的阶段性成果。

Title: The Completion of *The Compilation and Interpretation of The Zuo Commentary* by Yasui Ichihin and Its Hermeneutic Characteristics

Abstract: *The Compilation and Interpretation of The Zuo Commentary* is an important work written by Yasui Ichihin in the Meiji period of Japan, which has well annotated the classics and commentaries on *The Spring and Autumn Annals* through gathering all the opinions about it. Yasui Ichihin had completed it after extensively collecting and intensively studying the literature for nearly two decades, hoping that through exploring Confucian classics, it could be applied to administering the country and benefiting the people. This book is elaborate in the commentaries but brief in the classics, paying much attention to textual research and refusing to adopt the views of the schools of Gongyang and Guliang. The author had critically dealt with the research results of scholars in the past dynasties based on the principle of seeking truth from facts. The book draws on the strengths of others and always gives lots of unique insights, and it is mainly characterized by its extensive citations, independent insights, and the combination of textual research and discussion. In a

word, it has an important position and influence in the history of studies of *The Zuo Commentary on Spring and Autumn Annals*.

Keywords: Japanese sinology; Sokken Yasui; *The Compilation and Interpretation of The Zuo Commentary*; Studies on *Zuo Zhuan*

Author: **Chen Yanhui** is Distinguished Professor at Faculty of Chinese Language and Culture, Guangdong University of Foreign Studies (Guangzhou 510420, China), mainly engaged in research on the international dissemination of Chinese culture (Email: cyh234@163.com).

春秋左传文献传入日本时间较早,据《日本书纪》(『日本書紀』,720),百济五经博士段杨尔公元513年赴日时就携带《春秋》,这是有关《春秋》文献流传到日本的最早的文献记录。¹根据日本圣德太子(Shotoku Taishi)《宪法十七条》(『十七条憲法』)对《左传》引用,可以说明在公元604年之前,《左传》已经传入日本。²《春秋》和《左传》作为儒家经典,在日本研究者众多,成果比较丰富,其中江户和明治两个时期成就最高,出现了林罗山(Lazan Hayashi)的《春秋劈头论》(『春秋劈頭論』)、中井履軒(Riken Nakai)的《左传逢原》(『左傳逢原』)、荻生徂徕(Sorai Ogyu)的《左传古义》(『左傳古義』)、安井息軒(Sokken Yasui)的《左传辑释》(『左傳輯釋』)和竹添光鴻(Takezoe Koko)的《左氏会笺》(『左氏會箋』)等一批学术水平较高的著作。在这些著作之中,江户时期开始撰写,明治初年完成并出版的安井息軒的《左传辑释》是一部春秋左传学研究集大成之作,代表了日本幕末时期春秋左传学研究的最高成就。

安井息軒,名衡,字仲平,号息軒。自幼跟随父亲徂徕派学者安井沧州(Soshu Yasui)学习,后师从篠崎小竹(Kotake Shinozaki)、古贺侗庵(Dongan Koga)、松崎谦堂(Kodo Matsuzaki)。曾在饴肥藩藩校任教,担任藩主侍读,后任昌平坂学堂教官。著有《周礼补疏》(『周礼補疏』)《书说摘要》(『書說摘要』)《管子纂诂》(『管子纂詁』)《论语集说》(『論語集說』)等,其中《管子纂诂》《论语集说》等6部独撰或订正的著作被收入服部宇之吉(Unokichi Hattori)编辑的《汉文大系》(『漢文大系』)。安井息軒是幕末大儒,代表了幕末儒学的最高水平。日本学者川田刚(Tsuyoshi Kawada)称“议论文章,最醇且正,(……)尤用力于汉唐之注疏,参以众说,能发先儒所未发,为文取法唐宋,上溯秦汉,古色苍然”(转引自 金培懿 46)。黄遵宪称“余读其著作,体大思精,殊有我朝诸老之风,信为日本第一儒者,物茂卿、赖子

1 参见 张德恒:“6至16世纪《春秋》学文献流传日本考”,《江苏师范大学学报》(哲学社会科学版)5(2017):47-54。

2 参见 张德恒:“6至16世纪《春秋》学文献流传日本考”,《江苏师范大学学报》(哲学社会科学版)5(2017):47-54。

成辈，恐不足比数也”（转引自 张小敏 王长华 225）。清江苏按察使应宝时在《管子纂诂序》中称：“世有读仲平之注，平心和气，缕举众说，互相印证，而以讲求文字者，讲求典章制度，礼乐韬铃，政刑法律，而删其繁芜，撷其菁华，经之以经，纬之以孔孟之训，其有裨于世，詎浅鲜乎”（安井衡，《管子纂诂》33）。安井息轩作为日本“江户儒学集大成者”（王晓平 130），在春秋左传学研究方面“有相当功力”（沈玉成 刘宁 416），在日本汉学史上具有较高的地位。本文拟从安井息轩撰写该书的背景入手，分析其阐释方法与阐释特点，以确定该书的在春秋左传学史上的学术价值。

一、《左传辑释》之成书动因

《左传辑释》成书动因，安井息轩在《左传辑释序》中有明确说明：

年四十始来江户，稍稍得闻古人之绪言，窃谓士之生于斯世，岂偶然者哉？当须有所树立以为乱世之用。方今封建为治，虽礼俗异宜、治乱殊途，其大势则粗与周季同。士之所当取法，莫《左传》为善焉。因潜心于此书，用力之久，恍然若有所得。而才力浅薄，与心违。今老矣，不能复有所为，乃出十数年来所蒐辑，欲笺释以为一书（……）如此者复四年，裒然成帙，今兹七月始脱稿，其详于传而略于经者，不独经义深奥难窥，传义明然后经可得而言也，因名曰《左传辑释》云，明治三年庚午冬十月。（卷一 29）¹

安井息轩在自序中详细叙述了自己来到江户之后的心路历程、读书体悟、人生追求以及对时局的感受。从该书内心独白式的自序中我们可以清楚获知安井息轩撰写此书的目的和直接动因是经世致用、治世济众，下面从三方面对此加以分析：

第一、安井息轩“有所树立”的人生追求。他在自序清楚表明“士之生于斯世，岂偶然者哉？当须有所树立以为乱世之用”。“有所树立”即是有所建树，意味着应该取得成就或建立功勋，其最高的追求就是春秋时期鲁国大夫叔孙豹所说的“三不朽”，即“太上有立德，其次有立功，其次有立言，虽久不废，此之谓不朽”（杨伯峻 1199）。作为自幼精研儒家经典，浸润于儒家思想之中的安井息轩来说，“三不朽”已经成为其人生终极目标和终极追求。作为一个儒者，通过著书立说来实现自己的人生追求是最佳方式，因此，在安井息轩的一生中才有上文提到的《周礼补疏》《毛诗辑疏》《书说摘要》《管子纂诂》等经、史、子、集类宏富作品问世。具体到对《左传》的研究阐释，“有所树立”是指通过对《左传》的本义的探求，去

1 本文有关《左传辑释》的引文均来自 安井衡：《左传辑释》（成都：巴蜀书社，2020 年）。以下引文仅标注卷号和页码，不再一一说明。

伪存真，能够获得“高矣大矣”的“春秋之义”（卷一 21），对传义的探求是获得经义的途径和手段，“春秋之义”才是目标，通过探寻蕴含于经传中的“微言大义”，服务于“以为乱世之用”的终极目的，安井息轩正是通过一部部经典的阐释，来实现其人生目标。

第二、安井息轩对《左传》的精研与经世价值的推崇。安井息轩在众多儒家经典中，对《左传》用力甚勤，前后断断续续用了接近 20 年左右时间。结合黑江一郎（Ichiro Kuroe）“安井息轩年谱”和安井息轩《自述年谱》（『自述年譜』）等文献，我们可以得知他深入研读《左传》是在天保四年（1833 年）三月，这一年他首次来到江户，任藩主侍读，并于同年六月主持《左传》讲读，也就是上文中所说“年四十始来江户，稍稍得闻古人之绪言”，这一年他 35 岁，自序中所说四十岁应是大致说法。主持讲读需要他必须对《左传》十分熟悉，因此可以推测他在这个时期开始搜集春秋左传相关资料，虽然当时他不一定有撰写《左传辑释》的想法，但也为该书写作埋下了伏笔，奠定了基础。从该书的最终完成时间我们可以推算出，他应该是在 50 岁左右（1848 年）开始收集整理相关文献并研读各家注释。这个过程大约花费近 20 年的时间，并在明治元年（1868 年）完成初稿。同年九月，彦根藩学校送来该书的制版格式，他又用了四年左右的时间审校誊写，最终在明治三年七月，即公元 1870 年 7 月脱稿，并确定《左传辑释》之名。彦根藩学校于“明治辛未孟春”（39），即明治四年（1871 年）3 月将此书刊刻完成。该书刊刻后，安井息轩通过日本使臣柳原前光（Sakimitsu Yanagiwara）邀请应宝时为该书做序，在此之前，应宝时于 1867 年曾为他的《管子纂诂》撰写过序言。明治四年四月，日本使臣柳原前光到天津，带来新刊《左传辑释》，应宝时于当年七月完成序言。从对《左传》的接触、阅读、讲读，到搜集文献、撰写书稿、反复订正、撰写序言直至刊行，安井息轩在该书上花费了大量时间和精力，仅从这一点上就可以看出安井息轩对《左传》价值极为看重。他之所以这么重视《左传》，用他自己的话来说，即“士之所当取法，莫《左传》为善焉”。在安井息轩看来，《左传》有丰富的修身智慧和治国理政思想，有志于建功立业、报效国家者，《左传》是最好的教材。

第三、回应幕末“乱世”的社会需求。“乱世”是安井息轩对当时日本时局的界定。“以为乱世之用”的终极目的，即为日本幕末时期动荡的时局提供治世之法。关于日本的时局，安井息轩的看法是：“方今封建为治，虽礼俗异宜，治乱殊途，其大势则粗与周季同”（卷一 29），他认为当时日本的时局和西周末年相同，都面临巨大的国外压力和国内的政局变化，其中西方世界的冲击对日本知识分子的影响更为强烈。以 1853 年美国海军将领佩里（Matthew Calbraith Perry）率领军舰进入江户的“黑船事件”为标志，在欧美强硬的武力威胁下，日本幕府被迫开放国门，与美国、英国、俄罗斯、荷兰等相继签订通商条约，但条约签订导致朝廷和幕府之间发生激烈冲突。随着讨幕运动开始，幕

府权威一落千丈,经过1868年戊辰战争,德川幕府宣告灭亡,幕末时代结束,进入了明治时代。幕末时期的开始和结束,与安井息轩开始集中搜集资料到该书脱稿的时间(1848-1870)几乎完全重叠。国内政局的激变对安井息轩的内心产生很大的影响,使他想从左传中取法,有益于当世。这种经世致用的思想在1864年刊行的《管子纂诂》的序言中曾经有相同的表述:“方今洋夷猖獗,海内多事,择其法而施之,必有能因祸而为福者矣”(安井息轩,《管子纂诂》26)。在经世致用思想的指导下,安井息轩致力于《左传》阐释,本着实事求是治学态度,通过对传意的探寻来获得春秋大义。

二、《左传辑释》的阐释方法

安井息轩在《左传辑释》的《凡例》中说明了自己的阐释方法:

此编专解传。但传例,一释可推,及属辞比事,而经义自明者,置而不释焉。其特因告庙赴告而书之,无义足传者亦然。则有时乎及经,亦唯传意之求,不敢臆断。后儒解经,率主公、谷,甚者较彼此之得失,议他日之是非,锱计铢量,以弊其狱,其言若可听,而实与经背驰,今概不取。刘炫而下,驳杜而是者,收而不论。其涉疑互,及其义非,而其言足以惑人,则载而辨之,余皆芟落。清人精于考证,每逢疑义,博引广征,动数百千言,实事求是,固不得不然,但此篇主搜辑,致卷帙浩大,读者反感。今摘其要,义通则止,避烦也。皇国儒先,亦有补释左传者,予长于鄙,家又贫,勿论其未雕,虽既梓行者,力不能致,及来此都,去泛就要,汲汲乎唯古之稽,以故皆未及见,独得中井氏雕题而已。待其褒聚,岁不我与,他日得见,当补辑之,非敢简先辈也。(卷一 32)

《凡例》是掌握该书阐释方法的总纲领,可以概括为五个方面:一是该书专门解传。全书对经文注释极为简略,而对传文注释十分详尽。如文公元年,对经文的注释仅有三处:(1)“文公”下注释“名兴,僖公子。谥法,慈惠爱民曰文,忠信接礼曰文”;(2)对杜注“七月而葬,缓”的注释,“衡案,丧纪不数闰月。杜云:‘七月而葬’,非,余详于三十三传”;(3)对杜注“礼,卿不会公侯,而鲁大夫皆不贬者”一句的辨正,“衡案,春秋鲁史(……)与此自别”(卷八 167-171)。此句解释共64字。对比传文,仅对杜预关于闰月的注释,息轩的注释有380字之多,可见其用功之多。此外,对于“传例”、“属辞比事”等语意浅显、经意自明的内容或者“告庙赴告”等无关传义的内容不再注释。二是不采纳公羊、谷梁学派学者的观点。他认为主张公羊、谷梁学者的观点“较彼此之得失、议他日之是非、锱计铢量、以弊其狱”,他们的阐释好像有一定的道理,实际上却“实与经背驰”,没有领悟经文本义,所以不予采纳。三是驳杜者区别对待。安井息轩采取折衷为

学的态度，对于历代学者批评杜预的观点，他视具体情况采取相应的方法处理。对于“驳杜而是者”，直接采纳引用，不加评论。对于“涉疑互及其义非，而其言足以惑人”的观点，予以引用并加以辨析，除此之外都不引用采纳。四是对待清人考证成果摘其要义。安井息轩认为清人精于考证，特别是对于有疑义之处，能够博引广证，但是“动数百千言”，考证过于繁琐，如果全文引用会导致卷帙浩大，容易引起读者疑惑，也不利于读者阅读，所以他直接“摘其要义”，尽量简要，避免文字烦杂；五是对待本国学者研究成果，由于客观条件限制，他只采用了中井履軒的《春秋左传雕题》的观点。《左传辑释》五个阐释方法总体上易于理解，但其中关于对待杜预注释的处理稍显复杂，既是该书注释的主体，也是体现该书阐释方法的重点，下面略加讨论。

安井息轩最看重杜注。《左传辑释》以晋杜预的《春秋左传集解》为底本，杜注在该书中处于首要位置，全部采用，排版时用略小于经传的文字放在经文或传文之下，如：

《春秋》隐公三年：“三月，庚戌，天王崩。”杜预《注》：“周平王也。实以壬戌崩，欲诸侯之速至，故远日以赴。《春秋》不书实崩日而书远日者，即传其伪以惩臣子之过也。襄二十九年传曰：‘郑上卿有事’‘使印段如周’会葬。今不书葬，鲁不会”。（卷一 32）

杜注主要解释了经文中涉及到的三个问题：一是“天王”是指周平王；二是经文书写的周平王去世的日期错误，并指出错误的原因是“欲诸侯之速至”；三是说明周平王去世经文却不书会葬的原因，是因为鲁国没有参加。杜注对经文的阐释非常清晰，不仅指出经文错误，也揭示出经文如此书写的背景因素。此类注释在全书中所比例较高，安井息轩对此都采取只收录而不加任何阐释的方法。

历代学者对杜注的讨论很多，对于如何运用这些研究成果，安井息轩在《凡例》中说：“刘炫而下，驳杜而是者，收而不论。其涉疑互，及其义非，而其言足以惑人，则载而辨之，余皆芟落”（卷一 32）。从隋代刘炫开始至清末学者成果中，安井息轩选取两类：

第一类：对杜注补充阐发。当安井息轩赞同杜注，但是认为杜注解过于简单，不够清晰，容易引起疑问时，就进一步说明，如：

《左传》桓公元年：夏四月丁未，公及郑伯盟于越，结祊成也。

杜预《注》：结成易二田之事也。传以经不书祊，故独见祊。

衡案：成，平也。言结易田之约，因以与郑平也。传独言祊者，桓公欲得祊田，遂以废周公之祀，罪有所归焉。（卷二 171）

传文是对经文“夏四月丁未，公及郑伯盟于越”的注解，我们把经传的内容结合到一起，并不能清晰把握鲁桓公和郑庄公会盟的内容。于是杜注补充说明会盟是完成“易二田”，即交换祭田之事，说明了只写“祊”不写“许”的原因，是在前面的经文“三月，公会郑伯于垂，郑伯以璧假许田”（卷二170）中只写了“许田”，所以这里单独写“祊”。杜注这里只是叙述了此次会盟的原因，对于经传如此书写的原因却未揭说明，因此安井息轩首先解释“成”的含义，指出“成”表面上看是完成祊、许二田交易，实质上是鲁国与郑国达成协议。对于杜注“独见祊”的解释，他进一步指出真正的原因是为了指出鲁桓公“废周公之祀”之罪，许田本是鲁国祭祀周公之邑，祊田是郑国祭祀泰山之邑，桓公却因欲得祊田而废周公之祀，行为失当。安井息轩补充了理解经传本意的关键信息，给人以豁然开朗的感觉。

第二类：纠正杜注。杜注有许多错误之处，对此历代学者都会指出，安井息轩指出杜预注释的错误，并加以匡正。如果杜注错误比较明显，属于字句理解等方面的问题，安井息轩直接指出错误并加以说明，一般不再引用其他学者观点，如：

《左传》僖公二十二年：国人皆咎公。公曰：“君子不重伤，不禽二毛。古之为军也，不以阻隘也。寡人虽亡国之余，不鼓不成列。”子鱼曰：“君未知战。勍敌之人隘而不列，天赞我也。阻而鼓之，不亦可乎？犹有惧焉。且今之勍者，皆吾敌也。虽及胡耆，获则取之，何有于二毛？”

杜预《注》：不因阻隘以求胜。

衡案：阻，隔也。言不以兵隔绝之险隘之地也。下文“隘而不列”自彼言之，“阻而鼓之”，自我言之，“阻隘”分言可以见矣。注非。（卷六33）

这是《左传》关于宋楚泓水之战的记载。杜注认为传文中的“阻隘”是一个词，没有过多解释。安井息轩认为杜预理解有误，“阻”“隘”应是两个词，含义不同，“阻”是用兵隔绝之义，“隘”是地势险隘之义；这两个词的视角也不一样，“阻”是从说话者的角度来说的是派兵攻击，“隘”是从对方的角度而言遇到险隘的地势而不能排兵布阵。所以在安井息轩注释的最后用“注非”明确表明自己的看法。

当杜注出现的错误有学者已经指出时，安井息轩直接引用这些学者的成果，自己不再发表意见，如：

《春秋》隐公五年：五年，春，公矢鱼于棠。

杜预《注》：书陈鱼，以示非礼也。书棠，讥远地也。今高平方与

县北有武唐亭，鲁侯观鱼台。

《辑释》：阮元云：“《史记》作观渔于棠。《汉书·五行志》亦作渔，此古字假借也。《史记正义》引杜注，唐，作棠。”（卷一 107）

鲁隐公不听大夫宫之奇劝谏，到棠观鱼。杜预把经文中的“矢鱼”解释为捕鱼者陈列所捕之鱼，安井息轩认为此解不正确。他认为阮元的注释比较恰当，阮元以《史记》《汉书》为据，认为“鱼”应为“渔”，安井息轩直接引用阮元的观点，自己不再加以讨论说明。

安井息轩《左传辑释》独具个性、最具特色的阐释策略就是其“专解传”的释经方法。尤以“专解传”的经学解读法最为独树一帜。自春秋左传学文献东渐至日本，其流传之初仅限于上流社会及寺院僧侣之研习，未普及于民间。当时学者们所推崇的首推《春秋胡氏传》。从江户中期开始，日本《左传》学日益繁荣，研究者日众，影响力亦日渐扩大。然而，此时期成果的共同特点是经传并重，学者在注释时，对《春秋》和《左传》给予同等关注。增嶋兰畹（Ranen Masujima）的《读左笔记》（『読左筆記』）和东条一堂（Ichido Tojo）的《左传标识》（『左傳標識』），则标志着之学风格开始转变，开始更加专注于《左传》的阐释，都以驳正杜注为主要内容，通过对杜注的批驳来表达自己的思想。到了安井息轩在《左传辑释》中明确提出“专解传”治学方法，较之曾岛固和东条一堂治学路径更加清晰、观点更加鲜明，形成安井息轩独特的治学风格。其提出“专解传”的学术主张，不仅彰显了其独特的学术方法，更是其由“明传意”至“通经义”经学解读方法的学术宣言。安井息轩的《左传辑释》以其独特的阐释方法，为经典文献的解读提供了新的学术视角，不仅为《左传》的研究提供了新的视角，也为后世学者提供了宝贵的学术资源和研究方法。

三、《左传辑释》的阐释特征

清代经学家戴震在《与是仲明论学书》中说，“仆闻事于经学，盖有三难，淹博难，识断难，精审难。三者，仆诚不足以与于其间，其私自持，暨为书之大概，端在乎是”（371-372）。戴东原治学广博、通贯群经，天文、小学、律算、舆地诸学皆有很深造诣，是“乾嘉学派”的代表人物之一，他所说的“淹博”“识断”“精审”，实际上是提出了治经的基本要求，也可以作为判断解经之作是否合格的三个标准。三者之间联系紧密，互为表里，一体三面，“非博通难以有识断，无识断而强作解人，必流于臆断，而欲识断精审，又非专精不可”（虞万里 62）。从安井息轩《左传辑释》一书来看，“淹博”之难在于春秋经传的阐释涉及到古代经典、历史典籍、词语训释、典章制度等，要求作者必须有渊博的知识才能处理如此繁复的问题；“识断”之难是指从晋代杜预到清代乾嘉学派以及日本学者对《春秋》《左传》的上百家注释

中,进行比较判断,反复推敲,最终断以己意,成一家之言,其难度非常人所能够想象。“精审”之难在于用什么方法来阐释《左传》更能够求得传意,进而直达经义。《左传辑释》不仅体现“淹博”、“识断”、“精审”释读经传的总体要求,同时呈现出广征博引、断以独见、考虑结合的阐释特点。

(1) 广征博引。安井息轩学识广博,在《左传辑释》中通过广泛搜集历代经典文献和学者观点,对经传文本进行多维度的阐释。就安井息轩自身的学术积淀而言,涉猎较广,如川田刚在序言中所说,“先生一代耆宿,绝意仕进,专讲古学,先是所著《周官补疏》《毛诗补疏》《书说摘要》《论语集说》《管子纂诂》逐年刊行,而《仪礼》《国语》《孟子》《荀子》并有成说”(卷一 11)。安井息轩学养深厚,在经学、史学、子学等领域皆有成说,无论是学问的深度还是广度,都非一般学者可以企及。《左传辑释》吸收了自汉晋至清末历代学者的研究成果,如东汉服虔、晋代杜预、隋刘炫、唐孔颖达、宋林尧叟、明李惇、陆燾、傅逊、清惠栋、万斯大、沈彤、马宗琬、陈树华、毛奇龄、焦循、赵翼、王念孙、王引之、阮元、顾炎武等。在安井息轩引用的学者中,清代学者为主,以桓公二年经传为例,引唐孔颖达7次、明陆燾4次、清李惇1次、清焦循1次、清阮元1次、清顾炎武1次。¹8人之中,有6人是清代学者。这些学者在春秋经传、小学等领域皆有很深造诣,如唐孔颖达《春秋左传正义》、明代陆燾《左氏春秋镌》《左传补注》《春秋胡氏传辨疑》,清李惇著有《左传通释》、焦循《春秋左传补疏》、惠栋《春秋左传补注》、万斯大《学春秋随笔》、毛奇龄《春秋毛氏传》等。

在引用大量有关春秋左传研究成果之外,《左传辑释》还涉及到大量经学、史学、小学等方面的文献的运用,即“今其著《左传辑释》也,制度征诸三礼,占筮稽诸《周易》,天象、时令、名物、训诂验诸《月令》《夏小正》《尔雅》《说文》《考工记》,参之《公》《谷》以订其异同,质之《诗》《书》《语》《孟》以析其义理,证之《外传》《史记》《世本》《战国策》以覈其实迹”(卷一 17)。这些文献运用无疑使其对春秋左传的阐释更加具有说服力,如:

《左传》隐公元年:祭仲曰:“都城过百雉,国之害也。”

杜预《注》:祭仲,郑大夫。方丈曰堵,三堵曰雉。一雉之墙,长三丈,高一丈。侯伯之城,方五里,径三百雉,故其大都不得过百雉。

衡案:雉即𡵚之假借,《周礼·地官》封人职:“凡祭祀,饰其牛牲”,“置其𡵚”,注郑司农云:“𡵚,著牛鼻绳,所以牵牛者。今时谓之雉,与古者名同。”玄谓:“𡵚当以豸为声”,解同音假借之意。以补先郑之说也。雉经之雉,亦𡵚之假借,当训绳或依雉字解之,非也。如雉长短,许慎、戴礼及韩说,以为四丈,古周礼说以为三丈,杜氏依用之,未详孰是。何休云:“雉二百尺”,此则大长矣。(卷一 64-65)

1 参见 安井衡:《左传辑释》卷一,成都:巴蜀书社,2020年,第174-192页。

关于“雉”的含义，杜注释“雉”为长度单位，以墙为例，一雉长三丈，高一丈。至于这样解释的理由并没有详细说明。安井息轩从造字法的角度说明“雉”是假借字，是“綫”的假借。并引用《周礼》和郑司农、郑玄注释，认为是同音假借。关于一雉的长度，提出三种说法，一是按照周礼的三丈；二是依据许慎、大戴礼、韩说，为四丈；三是东汉何休提出的二百尺。安井息轩关于“雉”字的解释就涉及到《周礼》《说文》《大戴礼》三种文献以及何休、郑司农、郑玄注释，可见其掌握材料之丰富。

(2) 断以独见。历代注解春秋左传的学者数量较多，观点各异。安井息轩在博采众长的基础上，提出自己的观点，实事求是，力求客观公正，如：

《左传》隐公元年：书曰：“郑伯克段于鄢。”段不弟，故不言弟；如二君，故曰“克”；称“郑伯”，讥失教也；谓之郑志。不言出奔，难之也。

杜预《注》：传言夫子作《春秋》，改旧史以明义。不早为之所，而养成其恶，故曰“失教”。段实出奔，而以“克”为文，明郑伯志在於杀，难言其奔。

衡案：《郑风》《将仲子序》云：“将仲子刺庄公也。不胜其母，以害其弟。弟叔失道，而公弗制，祭仲谏而公弗听，小不忍以致大乱焉。”其诗三章，皆以庄公拒祭仲之谏为词，是郑人之志，以不早为之所，为庄公之失。仲尼是之，不言郑人，而称郑伯，故丘明以谓之郑志释之矣。仲尼之修《春秋》，笔则笔，削则削，郑伯志于杀，而难言出奔，有此理乎？况郑伯特失教而已，及其叛，不得已而攻之，始非欲杀之也。（……）传释其意曰“难之也”，言破之极难，以终上文如二君之意。左氏解经之精如此，人谓不受仲尼之旨，吾不信矣。（卷一 68-69）

关于传文中的“谓之郑志”“不言出奔，难之也”这两句话，历代学者有不同的解读，差异很大，争议的焦点在于“郑志”是什么和为什么“不言出奔”的问题。杜注认为“郑志”是郑伯杀段。安井息轩认为杜注关于“郑志”的解释背离了经传的本意，他引用《将仲子序》说明，郑人认为郑庄公最大的过失在于未及早处理共叔段的放纵行为，即传文所说的讽刺郑伯“失教”，而决不是“杀”。安井息轩认为所有问题的根源“皆郑伯失教所致”，这才是传文本意，杜预的问题在于误读“郑志”，并且过于执着于“郑志”。对于“不言出奔”，杜预解释为“郑伯志在於杀，难言其奔”，把“志在于杀”作为“不言出奔”的理由，过于牵强，让人不明所以；安井息轩认为“不言出奔”的实质是共叔段势力强大，势力强大到与一个国家实力相当，所以郑伯与其交战才能“如二君”，很难对抗，这里的“难”是难以战胜、难以破敌。孔

子修订春秋时之所以强调二国交战的“克”，却“不言出奔”，是想让后世知道“强臣难制”，势力一旦形成，“破之极难”。以此告诫后人。他认为这是左氏解经的精妙之处，真正理解了经文的本意。安井息轩的分析解读引经据典、条分缕析、鞭辟入里，观点客观，令人信服。

(3) 考论结合。安井息轩注重考据与义理相结合，把实证性研究与义理分析融合到一起，如：

《左传》僖公三十三年：葬僖公，缓。作主，非礼也。凡君薨，卒哭而祔，祔而作主，特祀于主。烝、尝、禘于庙。

杜预《注》：冬祭曰烝。秋祭曰尝。新主既特祀于寝，则宗庙四时常祀自如旧也。三年礼毕，又大禘，乃皆同于吉。（卷七 164）

孔颖达《正义》引《释例》对此进一步解释：“故造木主立几筵，特用丧礼祭祀于寝，不同之于宗庙。宗庙则复用四时烝、尝之礼也。三年丧毕，致新死者之主以进于庙，庙之远主当迁入祧，于是乃大祭于大庙，以审定昭穆，谓之禘”（578）。二者观点一致，认为“烝”“尝”是时祭，“禘”是三年之后举行的大祭，“特祀”是用丧礼在寝而不是庙祭祀木主。安井息轩认为杜预的观点不正确，他引用陆粲、万斯大、黄宗羲三家观点进行比较分析后认为：“杜注固失，而三家者亦未为得”。关于“烝、尝、禘于庙”，他认为：“祔后言祀，非小祥大祥禫祭而何？既禫，则纯吉矣，然后言烝、尝、禘于庙，是三年服毕，始合祭新主于庙也”。简言之，“烝、尝、禘于庙”是丧毕后合祭新主于庙。此外他认为“特祀”是“烝尝禘之爲合祭”，冬祭的“烝”和秋祭的“尝”是时祭，“禘”原是大祭，当传文把“禘”与烝尝并列在一起，表明三者都是时祭，而不是大祭。传文“必并言烝尝禘”的原因正是在于“丧毕以合祭新主于庙”，安井息轩的观点次第明晰，通过他的详细考证和对经义的条分缕析，我们发现“传文未尝与礼相违也”（卷七 164-166）。其他学者观点的解释看似合理，其错误正是在于违背了制礼的本意，即“新主与祖王同居一庙，褒黜已甚，岂先王制礼之意哉？既祔后，主反于寝，似与丧礼每加以远相悖”（卷七 166）。

安井息轩作为江户时代儒者代表，其学根于六经，积近二十年之功得以完成的《左传辑释》，广征博引、缕举众说、博采众长、互相印证，是日本江户、明治时期春秋左传学研究的标志性成果。彦根藩知事藤原直宪（）称其“广引博证、断以独见”（卷一 10），能够抉摘圣人之意，指出其具有治世济众、经世致用的价值。应宝时在《左传辑释》“序”中说：“仲平先生既全录杜注，而择取诸说之至当者附之，又间以其国人中井履軒之说益之，至其所自为说，尤精审不苟。（……）凡若此等，尤足使世之轻议《左传》者，无所置疑，关其口而夺之气。然则左氏固有功于春秋，而先生亦实有功于左氏矣。（……）”

方今遐迩，同风文教日盛，学者由传以进于经，‘明章大中，发露公器’，则此书固为先导也”（安井息轩，《左传辑释》9）应宝时认为安井息轩观点博采众长，严谨精审，指出其通过解传来理解经义的治学方法有开创之功，同时把他对《左传》的贡献与左丘明为《春秋》作传相媲美，这是对息轩《左传辑释》价值的最大肯定和最高评价。安井息轩通经致用的治学精神、经术合一的研究目标，折中为学、实事求是的为学风范，“专解传”的学术主张，“广征博引”“断以独见”“考论结合”的阐释特点，对明治时期竹添光鸿的《左氏会笺》以及对春秋左传学在日本乃至东亚地区学术影响力扩大有重要推动作用。

Works Cited

戴震撰、张岱年编：《戴震全书》。合肥：黄山书社，1995年。

[Dai Zhen and Zhang Dainian, eds. *The Complete Works of Dai Zhen*. Hefei: Huangshan Publishing House, 1995.]

金培懿：“江戸寛政年间以降学术态势与安井息轩之学风”，《国际儒学研究》第5辑。北京：中国社会科学出版社，1998年，第28-62页。

[Jin Peiyi. “The Academic Situation and Yasui Ichihin’s Academic Style Since Kansei of Edo Period.” *International Confucian Studies* Vol. 5. Beijing: China Social Sciences Press, 1998. 28-62.]

孔颖达：《春秋左传正义》第17卷。宋庆元六年绍兴府刻宋元递修本。

Kong Yingda. *Exact Implication of The Zuo Commentary on Spring and Autumn Annals*. Vol. 17. Carved in the 6th Year of Qingyuan Period in the Song Dynasty by Shaoxing House, Revised and Passed on to the Yuan Dynasty.]

王力：《王力文集》第16卷。济南：山东教育出版社，1990年。

[Wang Li. *Essays of Wang Li* Vol. 16. Jinan: Shandong Education Press, 1990.]

王晓平：《日本诗经学史》。北京：学苑出版社，2009年。

[Wang Xiaoping. *The History of Japanese Studies of Book of Songs*. Beijing: The Academy Press, 2009.]

沈玉成、刘宁：《春秋左传学史稿》。南京：江苏古籍出版社，1992年。

[Shen Yucheng and Liu Ning. *The History Draft of The Zuo Commentary on Spring and Autumn Annals*. Nanjing: Jiangsu Classics Publishing House. 1992.]

安井息轩：《左传辑释》。成都：巴蜀书社，2020年。

[Yasui Sokken. *The Compilation and Interpretation of The Zuo Commentary*. Chengdu: Bashu Publishing House, 2000.]

——：《管子纂诂》。成都：四川大学出版社影印版，2017年。

[— *The Spring and Autumn Annals of Guanzi*. Chengdu: Sichuan UP, 2017.]

杨伯峻：《春秋左传注》。北京：中华书局，1990年。

[Yang Bojun. *Chun-qi Zuozhuan Zhu*. Beijing: Zhong Hua Book Company, 1990.]

虞万里：“略论中国传统学术之专精与兼通”，《社会科学》2（2006）：62-75。

[Yu Wanli. “‘Traditional China Studies’ Discussions.” *Journal of Social Sciences* 2 (2006): 62-75.]

张德恒：“6至16世纪《春秋》学文献流传日本考”，《江苏师范大学学报》（哲学社会科学版）5（2017）：47-54。

[Zhang Deheng. “Research on the Spread of Literature of the Spring and Autumn Annals to Japan from the Sixth to Sixteenth Century.” *Journal of Jiangsu Normal University (Philosophy and Social Sciences Edition)* 5 (2017): 47-54.]

张小敏、王长华：“日本汉籍安井息轩《毛诗辑疏》的宗经意识及其实践方式”，《中国语言文学研究》春之卷（2020）：225-231。

[Zhang Xiaomin and Wang Changhua. “The Worship and Practice of Confucian Classics in The Compilation and Annotation of Mao Poetry by Japanese Chinese Yasui Ichihin.” *Chinese Language and Literature Study* Spring (2020): 225-231.]

主体虚化、反事实叙事与多重时间塑型：

后现代历史元小说的“文学性”解读

**Marginalized Subjective, Counterfactual Narrative,
and Multiple Temporal Shapes: An Interpretation
of Postmodern Historical Metafiction from the
Perspective of Literariness**

张 谥 (Zhang Su) 刘 灿 (Liu Can)

内容摘要：虽然后现代历史元小说有操弄集体记忆和虚无“官方”历史的指责，但文学性是后现代历史元小说作为一种文类及批评范式的合法性所在。与其他文类相比，后现代历史元小说的文学性体现在：它不仅是语言的双重虚构，更是主体的“虚”化艺术；它用技术崇拜取代“时代精神”的崇拜，打开了“反事实”和“可能世界”的伦理基础；此外，文本写作和文本的阅读中的多次时间塑形，即通过“时间错位”、“大历史”和“节奏时间”等多重时间操控也是后现代历史元小说的文学性特征。就阅读策略而言，读者聚焦文本自设时间和“未读问题”的当下性，聚焦发现新的伦理景观而不是文本意义。

关键词：后现代历史小说；主体虚化；反事实；多重时间；文学性

作者简介：张谥，广州大学新闻与传播学院特聘教授，中国文艺国际传播研究中心主任，主要研究文艺传播、影视文学和比较文学；刘灿，广州大学海上丝绸之路重点实验室研究员，研究方向为文学批评和话语分析。本文为国家社科基金项目“欧美后现代历史诗学批评研究”【项目批号：20BWW006】的阶段性成果。

Title: Marginalized Subjective, Counterfactual Narrative, and Multiple Temporal Shapes: An Interpretation of Postmodern Historical Metafiction from the Perspective of Literariness

Abstract: Although postmodern historical metafiction has been criticized for manipulating collective memory and voiding “official” history, literariness is where the legitimacy of postmodern historical metafiction as a literary category and a critical paradigm lies. Compared with other literary categories, the literary nature of postmodern historical metafiction is reflected in the fact that it is not only a double fiction of

language, but also a “false” art of subject marginalization; it replaces the worship of “Zeitgeist” with the worship of technology, and opens the door to the “counterfactuals” and “possible worlds.” Moreover, the multiple temporal shaping in the writing and reading of the text—the multiple temporal manipulation through “time dislocation,” “big history,” and “rhythmic time”—is also a literary feature of postmodern historical metafiction. As far as reading strategies are concerned, readers should focus on the present nature of the text’s self-imposed time and “unread questions,” and on the discovery of new ethical landscapes rather than textual meanings.

Keywords: postmodern historical novels; subject emptiness; counterfactual; multiple time; literariness

Authors: **Zhang Su** is Distinguished Professor at School of Journalism and Communication, and director of the Center for International Communication of Chinese Literature and Art, Guangzhou University (Guangzhou 510006, China). His research interests are literary communication, film and television literature and comparative literature (Email: Zhangsu626@126.com). **Liu Can** is Research Fellow in the Key Laboratory of Maritime Silk Road, Guangzhou University (Guangzhou 510006, China). Her research interests are literature criticism and discourse analysis (Email: Liucan0401@163.com).

俄罗斯文学上的“白银时代”（Silver Age, 1895-1930）和欧美哲学的“语言学转向”时代多有重合。俄罗斯文学上的“白银时代”是形式主义美学所主张的艺术摆脱内容的束缚而走向现代的形式自由的转折时代。雅各布森（Roman Jakobson）率先提出“文学性”问题并用“文学性”来区分文学和非文学，其核心在于强调文本的语言层面“对普通语言有组织的破坏”（Erllich 219）¹，即“在于文学语言对日常语言的变形、强化和扭曲”（江飞 35）。雅各布森认为文学不是一种美学，也不是一种方法论，而是一门关于文学的科学。很明显，雅各布森的“文学性”内涵也深受流行的实证主义影响，有明显的殖民特色。文学性因为是以语言为媒介的艺术，自然就成为文学研究的对象。

雅各布森是以诗歌的语言，即“一种没有被污染的语言”，作为考察对象，其语言“手法”（device）是指“组合其材料、语言以及使其题材变形的一种精细技巧”（江飞 41）。但作为手法的语言还不能和美国新批评的“内部研究”区分开。伊格尔顿·埃斯卡皮（Robert Escarpit）认为文学性不是文学作品的内容和形式，而是探讨“文学事实”这一社会事实，探讨“社会中”的文学，而不是“文学中”的社会。²雅各布森进一步在形式主

1 本文引文均出自笔者译。

2 参见 埃斯卡皮：《文学社会学》，王美华、于沛译，合肥：安徽文艺出版社，1987年，第83页。

义和未来主义之间进行了主次排序，把“手法”作为文学研究的主角，使内容再一次回归到超越形式之上，语言形式重新获得了文学本体的位置。¹雅各布森和新批评虽然都是基于语言结构的分析，但雅各布森是出于对文学研究自主性的强调，目的也是凸显语言形式本身，与希利斯·米勒（J. Hillis Miller）聚焦于历史文化语境完全不同。因此，雅各布森的优先性的选择是伦理性的而非逻辑的或实证的。由于聚焦于作品的结构原理、构造方式、音韵、节奏等语言材料的归纳和分析，雅各布森的“文学性”也就自然具有了实证主义意义上的精确或科学性，这一点也深深影响了后捷克结构主义、英美新批评和法国结构主义。众所周知，伦理的强调容易滑入修辞学的领地：一方面“纯粹化”导致抽象化；另一方面，价值判断的“好不好”被科学意义上的“对与错”替代。如果文艺批评还坚持体裁的内核，文学性理所应当也应该是小说的本质特征。而且，后现代历史小说文学性也是通过对思想现实和语言符号的“隐喻性置换”²，不以语言学的精确性而以智识的娱乐性为旨趣——虽然没有走出语言、传统和认识论三位一体的“语言-思维”的语言学分析模式。在艺术上，后现代历史元小说彻底走出了海德格尔（Martin Heidegger）所说的现代性本体神论。³

当下，网络时代正向智能时代迅速转型，后现代历史小说的“文学性”内核及其体裁价值就成为一个学理问题，特别是通过网络历史小说的“文学性”是一个很大的问题。琳达·哈琴（Linda Hutcheon）从“模型化后现代”的角度，提出了后现代历史元小说的概念，认为其文学性在于“互文性”、“戏仿”和“历史话语”（116）。她进一步挖掘了这类小说的语言学指涉的“本质玄学”，也就是现实世界只是遗物或痕迹，小说全部是“语言活动”。但是，由于语言学一直不能解决的表征的悖论（包括语言表征事实的“能”与“不能”、小说语言通俗化等），我们就只能回归到“家族相似性”，把后现代历史诗学放在量子哲学尤其是其“反事实”的理论、吸收 AI 技术，很容易发现主体虚化、反事实叙事与多重时间塑型是后现代历史元小说凸显的文学性特征。

一、“虚”艺术：从语言的双重虚构到主体虚化

基于本体统一性的宏大叙事的强调基础、本质、终极价值的现代性专制地取消了差异性，这是特征性分析最重要的部分。同时，僵硬、沉闷的同一性和本质论压制了多样性、个性和“他性”，往往导致极权主义。后现代是现代性的罗格斯中心主义乌托邦的对立面和替代物。但后现代性的降世主要不是通过尼采式用锤子敲碎现代性的信仰大厦和知识大厦的产物，而是德

1 参见 赖大仁：“‘文学性’问题百年回眸：理论转向与观念嬗变”，《文艺研究》9（2021）：34。

2 参见 Jacques Derrida, *Writing and Difference*, translated by Alan Bass, Britain: Routledge and Kegan Paul Ltd, 1978, 278.

3 参见 马丁·海德格尔：《哲学论稿》，孙周兴译，北京：商务印书馆，2016年，第251页。

里达通过从语言结构观念的解剖作为切入口,结合西方技术,反思和解构西方知识界自柏拉图以来的在日常语言的最深处活动着的(通过隐喻的置换与自然科学的共谋)形而上学的本质论和认识论的突破,这和东方“道生一、一生二、二生三”的发生学思维具有相似性。索绪尔(Ferdinand de Saussure)发现了能指(significant)和所指(signifié)的任意性、习俗性和语言符号的自足性,揭示了语言所构建的理性或事实的局限,也揭示了 we 接近历史所依靠的语言结构和文化结构的局限和可能导致的误读。语言的选择过程,虽然被实证主义标榜了科学性,但从开始到结束都潜伏着伦理的暗河。本体论以追求共相的唯实论为逻辑起点,但一个悖论是:正如赫拉克利特(Heraclitus)早就说过“人不能同时踏进同一条河流”,本体自身是随着伦理的结构性变化而流动和变化的,所有文本的本质是想象的共同体。就文学性而言,伊格尔顿(Terry Eagleton)主张“文学的对立范畴可能是事实性、技术性或者科学化的写作”(25)。他借用维特根斯坦的家族相似性来反对本质论,理由也是用对立面会导致概念的所指不稳定,从而主张文学性在于中间事例及其有机联系的思想。¹伊瑟尔(Wolfgang Iser)主张“文学作品的面对的是逃脱了该系统掌握的”“不可逃逸的剩余物”(Gale 324-340)。海登·怀特(Hayden White)“扭转了20世纪六、七十年代历史哲学对历史文本中‘要素’的偏爱”(杨梓露 182)。海登·怀特主张打开历史小说的关键在于历史书写,“而历史小说本身是一种以伦理为轴心‘言辞机构’的选择”(张谔 677)。可见,纵然哲学上“殊相”的虚构及其语言的虚构是包括小说在内的文学作品的文学性基础,但语言的内容和形式只是后现代历史元小说文学性的一部分所在。

尽管后现代性大多是作为主张、宣言、构想、思潮、生活方式、艺术形态等,但后现代历史元小说强调的是历史与小说的共性,“这个共性就是历史与小说共享的语言叙事基础”(虞建华 145)。这样,后现代历史诗学把史学和诗学的导向了伦理这个新领域。最早定义后现代历史小说或编史元小说的是加拿大学者琳达·哈琴。她是在新历史主义的基础上,进一步以“知识论”而非“本体论”的历史观为哲学起点,而知识则是由“记忆”和“语言”组成,与语言结构视角的索绪尔或福柯式分析已经相隔很远。现代主义以“自我”为中心,而后现代主义以“语言”,确切地说,以语言狂欢化,即语言实验与语言游戏为中心。弗雷德里克·詹姆逊(Fredric Jameson)认为,通过语言,我们在接近历史和现实过程中通过把事件文本化。这个过程的叙事化中不可避免地被“意识形态”或伦理道德所操控,即“政治无意识”。²从语词到意识形态的分析手法虽然走出了实证主义的形式窠臼,但极有可能导

1 参见 特里·伊格尔顿:《文学事件》,阴志科译,郑州:河南大学出版社,2017年,第24页。

2 参见 弗雷德里克·詹姆逊:《政治无意识》,王逢振、陈永国译,北京:中国人民大学出版社,2018年,第59页。

致了所指虚无，如果没有伦理的在场。巴赫金（Bakhtin Michael）的狂欢化指大众的、平民阶层的俚语、俏皮话、黑话、生造词、口头禅、猥亵语、外来语和俏皮话以及本真但有生命力的民众欲念的食物、恶习、排泄、性等语言，这些几乎都不符合伦理道德和语法规范，但体现了娱乐至上的一种实用主义解构思路。在历史元小说中，狂欢化的盒子一旦开启，话语方式和思维方式也就走向后现代了。语言不再是反映世界而是制造世界，“语言是独立地本体，不是工具”（陈世丹 208）。文学符号跳跃，即符号所建构地意象客体随着符号的自然排列而发生空间断的跳跃式无序地发展，意味着选择不断进行和事件发展的可能性不断增加。“最为普遍的方式由倒叙、插叙，另外还有叙述中的提前闪回、平行发展、交错等”（龚见明 118），如德里罗（Don DeLillo）的《坠落的人》（*Falling Man*, 2007）采用顺叙与倒叙两条叙事线索，首尾衔接的圆形故事架构和电影叙事语言。语言游戏、通俗化、戏仿、拼贴、散装故事、蒙太奇、迷宫式意义网络、黑色幽默、语言游戏等文学性手法的使用，不仅超越了事件的虚构和语言的虚构的两个层面的虚构，语言进一步背离了萨特（Jean-Paul Sartre）所说的“介入现实”¹而偏向罗兰·巴特（Roland Barthes）所说地“不及物写作”和“零度写作”²，也就是介入主体思维或伦理的领地。可以说，后现代历史元小说的文字文本只表达流动伦理意义，不表征世界，这是这种新的诗学的文学性的重要特征。语言突破聚焦受害者主体和事件余震的写作模式、语言的狂欢以及多重且非逻辑的故事虚最终都是用来表征伦理的流动。

此外，就主题而言，后现代历史元小说的目的并非全然否定一个不可知的大写的历史，而是给与小写的复数的历史以合法的地位，从而深化关于历史性质和本质的反思与认识。³它彻底地走出“结构－解构”的阐释循环，立足于历史多样性、可能性和丰富性，它不是新历史主义小说，是进一步“后现代化”和“小说化”。乔纳森·卡勒（Jonathan D. Culler）、伊格尔顿、德里克·阿德里奇、希利斯·米勒等文学理论家进一步从反表征的文学事件论的角度，研究文本的意向性、生成性和阅读的操演性。⁴如果说这种反表征的事件论还有新历史主义的颠覆和对立的影子，那虚假或虚构论就完全虚化了“记忆”的“意指”，把小说主题旭化成了纯语言的艺术或游戏。“传统小说（包括现实主义何现代主义小说）的叙述方式便是虚假的造就者之一：它虚构出一个虚假的故事去‘反映’本身就是虚假的现实，因而把读者引入双重虚假之中”（柳鸣九 6）。这样，后现代历史元小说，虽然其故事原型也是历史事件，也只保留了小说的语言学外表和轮廓。就主题而言，它颠覆了传统叙

1 参见让-保罗·萨特：《什么是文学？》，施康强译，北京：人民文学出版社，2018年，第9页。

2 参见罗兰·巴尔特：《写作的零度》，李幼蒸译，北京：中国人民大学出版社，2008年，第6页。

3 参见虞建华等：《历史、政治与文学书写》，上海：上海外语教育出版社，2019年，第201-301页。

4 参见何成洲、但汉松：《文学的事件》，南京：南京大学出版社，2020年，第2页。

述的线性的因果逻辑和先验、客观的意义，解构了传统叙事的体裁边界与雅俗差异，聚焦语言符号的差异和读者的伦理意义生成。这种书写导致的语言符号的不确定性和多样性使得文本、作者、阅读、写作、体裁、批评理论等传统文学性内涵都被质疑或悬置。所以，作为“不及物书写”的后代历史元小说指涉的是另外一种逻辑下或是一种反事实的世界。它的虚构性不在于“本体”主题的虚构，也不在于语言的叙事虚构，它最极致的点是主体的虚构与消弭。如果说，传统小说通过语言进行的双重虚构还是以人为中心的虚构，而后现代历史元小说不仅仅剥夺了“我”、“自我”的中心地位，包括消弭了读者、作者、作品人物的物理学中心位置，彻底零碎化官方对历史事件的意义，根据写作者和阅读者的两个当下的社会性赋予历史事件——通常是“非常事件”¹——的一个语言镜像和一种伦理景观。主体虚化后，其意向性被悬置、主观感性被消弭，人的行动失去统一性，人和物的世界变成物和物的世界，或者说主体虚化为“物”。

二、“新”技术：“反事实”与“可能世界”

后现代主义反中心、反本质和反基础。但后现代主义元小说并不是没有崇拜。它表现出对“新”技术的集体崇拜。在开元小说先河的约翰·福尔斯（John Robert Fowles）的小说《法国中尉的女人》（*The French Lieutenant's Woman*）中，男一号查尔斯·斯密森（Charles Smithson）是一位业余科学家，对达尔文进化论以及古代化石很感兴趣的伦敦绅士。“后现代主义”元小说的这种有效的技术知识构建对人们的自然和文化的认知有着越来越大的影响，哈桑称之为“新灵知主义”（the new gnosticism）（Hassan 172）。这种技术崇拜本质上也是一种理性崇拜，但是一种包含预测的、不确定性的理性，不是逻辑自洽而不符合社会现实的理性的“致命的自负”。一方面，后现代历史元小说是在真实历史基础上的对历史事件的再叙述和再阐释。另一方面，这种再阐释的假设是有“新”的技术，自然也有新的不确定性或可能性。海登·怀特认为历史与文学都是基于伦理的“言辞结构”。²可以说，后现代主义历史元小说是有别于官方历史的另外一种伦理选择，是一种新的技术-伦理的组合。例如，以事件的文学著作有2000多部。但是，唐·德里罗的长篇小说《天秤星座》（*Libra*, 1988）以肯尼迪被刺杀这一历史事件以及官方出台的26卷本的《沃伦报告》（沃伦委员会1964）的“唯一子弹论”与“阴谋无关论”的阐释为基础，假设技术上认为是“一场预谋”，且不只一枪，那么，“肯尼迪被刺”事件中的人物就会有另外的伦理选择的新的组态，也就是新的可能世界。本来，官方的《沃伦报告》对事件进行了详细记录、调查与分析，但其

1 参见 虞建华：“小说、历史与美国文学的历史批判”，《英美文学论丛》2（2022）：143-153。

2 参见 赖国栋：“创伤、历史叙事与海登·怀特的伦理意识”，《学术研究》4（2019）：124-132+178。

结论没有走出历史上所有美国总统被刺杀都是“意外事件”的阐释意识形态或政治经济学循环，其结论的权威性至今还广受质疑。小说《天秤星座》基于“新”的技术，就“事实”重新虚构了三个层面的故事：第一个是肯尼迪遇刺的真实历史事件，一种技术－理论的组合；第二个是叙述者本人虚构的故事，另外一种技术－伦理认知；第三个是该作品中的人物讲的故事，一种对技术－伦理认知的再认知。这三个故事都以“科学最新发现”作为叙事的基础，对历史真实的戏仿、对以往作品的戏仿以及对其自身的戏仿，三个故事相互消解而不是相互印证。肯尼迪被刺杀是美国历史上一件重大的政治事件，《沃伦报告》是美国政治经济学和历史学的产物。技术上而言，在1963年11月22日12点30分，当奥斯瓦尔德从6楼射出了3枚子弹，与《沃伦报告》叙述的世界不同，多利策尔（Lubomír Doležel）叙述的“可能世界”更加合乎逻辑，也就是说另外一种技术－伦理组合必然存在，因为凶手可能打到了总统，也可能没有。

事实上，肇始于莱布尼茨（Gottfried Wilhelm Leibniz）的可能世界理论于上世纪70年代被广泛地引入到文学领域。维尔特（Werth）沿着索绪尔开创的语言学路径，提出了话语世界、文本世界、亚世界的三层次结构，即包含可能世界的伦理组合。唐·德里罗基于“新”技术发现，把虚构叙述世界内部次级可能世界间的不平衡关系及其冲突的情节诗学发挥到了极致。《天秤星座》的开放式结构、非线性和元小说叙事都是当时“后”思潮和“新”技术的网络化组合。在文本现实性和虚拟性之间的张力之外，西方叙事理论更注重在经验的范畴中把自然科学、尤其是计算机技术、心理学的发现挪用到探究读者如何伦理再选择，构建新的故事情节。比如，玛丽·瑞恩是借助电脑制图学和影视学技术。而20世纪90年代末，埃斯彭·阿尔萨斯（Espen Aarseth）的“赛博文本”直接把文本游戏化，传统的“表征”被模拟叙事所替代，也就通过把复杂系统的集合假定、计算模型和思想实验等自然科学的反事实思维挪用于小说分析。事实上，只有技术崇拜才能完成这种叙事的替代。“人文世界更加类似量子世界而不是经典世界，因而更适合以叙事的方式机型模拟”（张军137）。同时，基于反事实的量子理论需要我们修正本质论哲学的定义以及定义事件的范畴。如果用量子信息媒介，量子叠加态的量子不可预测性原理以及粒子、场、基本化学元素、引力势等概念工具，我们完全有理由相信量子力学理论出世前，人类对历史事件的观察和阐释都存在另外的因果链条和行动序列的可能性。“叙事不仅仅是赋予经验以意义的文化代码，而是一个人类普适的元代码，以此来传递关于共享现实本质的跨文化信息”（White 6）。这个元代码是指叙事的一个现实版本，“其可接受性受常规和‘叙事必然性’支配，而不是遵循经验事实和逻辑要求”（张军137）。基于技术提供的新的可能，纳尔什·古德曼（Nelson Goodman）提出

了合成与分解、权重、秩序化、删减与补充、变形等五种制造世界的方式。¹特纳通过投射,包括故事元素之间的投射、选择性透射、突现结构(emergent)等三个方面的叙事思维进行“概念融合”,使得一个故事输入而融合生成另外的故事,即离散模拟、心里逃逸、语义阐发、语用述行和媒介表征来激发不同读者的知识脚本,故事得以外化成新的可能世界的一种结构。所以,约翰·福尔斯为《法国中尉的女人》设计的三种可能的结局,开创了元小说的先河,也反击了现实世界中,即20世纪60年代欧美世界的“文学衰竭论”和“小说困境论”,也是小说家通过技术崇拜找到的小说发展之新路。

三、多重时间:时间错位与数次重塑

语言学视角的后现代小说都假定时间的连续性和同一性。索绪尔的结构主义语言学只是突出了能指与所指之间的约定成俗的关系。福柯指出了“词”的意义“撇开了任何理论价值或客观进步的认识论领域”。²而“德里达经常从语言学和词源学入手,去发掘那些人为的设定和概念偷换的无底的游戏过程,即一个概念与另外一个概念合乎逻辑的推演,实则就是隐喻替换隐喻的过程”(陈晓明 46)。语言的结构主义和解构主义都是共时的研究。与此不同,海登·怀特则从历史书写的规则,也就是历史知识的制作、发明及其背后的权力运作机制来讨论作为文学仿制品的历史这种言辞结构历时地发生的话语转移的情节编排模式、解释模式和意识形态含义模式。但是无论是习俗、语义、隐喻偷换还是书写规则,都以时间的预设、错位和重置为起点。詹姆斯认为,前现代、现代和后现代是不同时空观念的不同的生活方式或者说感知方式。“历史书写本质上是在追摹时间所映照的文化变迁踪迹”(勒狄克 12)。为后现代历史元小说“时间错位”的合法性站台的理论家朗西埃(Jacques Rancière)就是以时间的先后来祛伪、解密历史事件的因果顺序。在2017年纽约主题会议上,朗西埃将“场所”的诗学逻辑解构历史叙事,尤其是以解构年鉴学派为典型的历史“逼真”即科学性背后这种真理体制(truth regime)的核心论题。朗西埃通过分析历史叙事中的因果顺序和持续两种意象,把“一切皆流,一切皆变”(王曦 19)的时间切分为特定的时代,还为时间中的所有历史存在设定了其对应的存在方式。这种对应式单线的、封闭的,并且由于历史叙事对诗学修辞机制的征用暗含意识形态压制和伦理选择的再组合,这种因为笃信而存在的各种历史的时代必然会是另外的“时代精神”³,尽管这是一种是花样的乌托邦。李凯尔特(Heinrich Rickert)因此将历史的本质定位“异质性”和“间断性”两种,而与自然科学的“同质性”和

1 参见 Nelson Goodman, *Ways of World Making*, Indianapolis: Hackett, 1978, 7-20.

2 参见 米歇尔·福柯:《词与物》,莫伟民译,上海:上海三联书店,2001年,第2页。

3 参见 王曦:“年代错位”与多重时间性:朗西埃论历史叙事的“诗学程序”,《文艺研究》5(2020): 15-26。

“连续性”相区别。无独有偶，中国的史学批评家刘知几在《史通》中也是从言语的文学性出发，采取这种“史/时的变易观”（李纪祥 57）。刘知几反对用“文饰伤实”来错乱古今，但他重视“天然”或“本色”，赞成口语能够更真实地叙说历史。朗西埃指出，“取论”即制作“时代精神”、“编排”即把社会要素按照“时代精神”所需要的秩序编排关系、“风格”即把个体或“殊相”通过“句法秩序”上升为时代样本或时代殊相。¹这三种“诗学程序”或者说修辞机制也就是通过“年代错位”，即操控时间来导入可能世界的新的伦理程序。“取论”、“编排”和“风格”三种修辞手法是波利比乌斯之类的历史学家把历史叙事中的诗学程序变成了西方延续两千多年的本质主义进步历史观。这种本质主义的史学观与“神学”逻辑相联系，必然是目的论的、连续的并且纳入永恒同一的超验时间意象的“现在”的范畴。这种历史叙事，不再以亚里士多德的诗学模仿所强调的“可能性”为依据，而是以实然发生背后的“天意”为依据。这种天意实际是“与当下权力关系和历史存在相适应的意识形态”（王曦 21）。“（叙事）行动者被剥夺了本有的行动潜能（……）无力开启新的历史叙事”（王曦 21）。可见，朗西埃为年代错位的后现代历史元小说辩护，一方面也是一种叙事观念的回归，解放了作家的想象力，也提供了流行的虚构叙事的合法性抗辩。比如一些历史穿越剧常常被贴上“混淆事实”的虚无主义标签。福克纳在《押沙龙，押沙龙！》（*Absalom, Absalom!*, 2004）中摆弄物理时间即钟表时间、故事时间和小说时间也是这个逻辑。小说中，萨德本既是叙事者又是被叙说者，萨德本、福克纳、昆丁、田纳西州、亚拉巴马州和密西西比州的南方人都有自己的时间和角度，文本没有本质一致的时间观。“还得过三个小时他才知道为什么她叫他去，因为事情的这一部分，开头的部分，昆丁已经知道”（福克纳 1）。这三个小时，福克纳说是由于昆丁一直听着父亲讲着同样的故事，是“小镇八十年传统的一部分”（福克纳 6）。萨德本在故事时间的 1869 年就去世了，而福克纳却把昆丁自杀的前一年，即 1909 年作为小说的开始，即“从 1909 年九月的下午一直上推到 1833 年 6 月那个星期日的早晨，当时（……）”（福克纳 6）。福克纳小说的时间的多重性特征是后现代历史元小说的典型代表。

此外，时间拉长也是一种塑形。与布罗代尔（Fernand Braudel）采取长时段的线性叙事不同，微软的比尔·盖茨大力推动的“大历史是一场嵌入长时间尺度的思想文化运动”（Katerberg 72）。后现代历史小说中的“地质学时间尺度”是直接借用于克里斯蒂安（D. Christian）、布朗（C. S. Brown）、斯皮尔（F. Spier）等大历史宏观叙事。虽然宏大叙事越来越没有市场，但大历史观打通了自然和社会（即第二自然）的时间线，不以文献证据而以自然科学定律和演算分析作为研究方法，嵌入了叙事的当下性和未来性。虽然，它

1 参见王曦：“‘年代错位’与多重事件性：朗西埃论历史叙事的‘诗学程序’”，《文艺研究》5（2020）：19。

的深度时间没有细节、情感、结构和特性，但其综合现代科学知识去探究宇宙起源的自然时间，尤其是其聚焦“人类之网”²、全球化、科学精准性和互惠共生模式的预测性叙事，也是后现代历史元小说比较常见的的时间技巧。美国理论家和伊丽莎白·厄尔玛斯都对西方深受“单一透视技术”（technique of single-point perspective）影响的现代时间观念、宏大叙事和西方中心主义提出过批评，要求尊重全球时间的多元性。多时间、长时间必然需要根据文本来分段，所以，在牛顿的“绝对时间”、18世纪的“宇宙时间”和1884年开始的国际标准时间的基础上，伊丽莎白·厄尔玛斯提出了“节奏时间”。¹“（它）反对现代的线性时间，其特点在于无本质、无普遍性、无意义、无指向，主要依赖于地方化安排”（Jenkins 175）。“节奏时间”观念就像茱莉亚·克里斯蒂娃（Julia Kristeva）的“女性时间”观一样，彻底颠覆了年鉴派或编年史的叙事模式以及传统小说中的物理时间观，也解构了宇宙时间观所蕴含的超验性、目的论和中立性，展现了后现代时间的不确定性，随意性和多元丰富性。时间塑形与“节奏时间”不仅区分了现代小说与后现代小说，还能走出海登·怀特的“历史文学一致观”，自然是后现代历史元小说的文学性特征所在。在本世纪初，随着网络、电视、自媒体和数字化技术的发展，米勒提出了“文学是永恒的”和“文学终结论”两个相互矛盾的预测。²米勒所指的“终结的文学”是指一种受特定历史制约的、与社会环境、意识形态或时代精神以及个人机遇具有统一性和持久性的文学。而永恒的文学是指文学的文学性，“是作为一种普遍的、运用可视为文学的文字或其他符号的能力，具有永恒性和普适性，是不受时空限制的一切人类文化的特征”（廖颖 2）。这样，米勒进一步阐释了后现代历史元小说的文学性和意义零散的表面的悖论。就后现代历史元小说而言，故事里面的人物本就有不同的时间观和生命观，都在可能世界里面重做伦理选择。比如，福克纳赋予时间根据事件的发展而具有延展性和轮回性，“自由组合的时间就是福克纳历史观最完美的时间叙事形式”（姜德成 仪爱松 72）。可见，如果对时间同一性的颠覆是后现代小说的共性，那么，后现代历史元小说的核心是对时间同一性的多重重塑和多次变形。

如果主体虚化、反事实叙事与多重时间重塑作为后现代历史元小说的文学性所在，那么，对后现代历史小说的阅读除了采用一般后现代作品的“去文本性”、王安忆的“远距离阅读”和弗兰克·莫莱蒂（Franco Moretti）的“远读”等策略以外，采取宏观观察视野、搁置现实的逻辑，采用可能性伦理来处理“大量未读”问题是读者与作者、文本三者对话的一种必然的方

1 参见 邓京力、李鹏超：“历史时间与厄尔玛斯的‘节奏时间’观念”，《史学月刊》11（2018）：94-103。

2 参见 希利斯·米勒：《文学死了吗》，秦立彦译，桂林：广西师范大学出版社，2007年，第9、21页。

式，这也是这类小说阅读的当下性所在。后现代历史元小说的阅读就需要作者走出但不能远离文本，需要自设时间，突破把后现代历史元小说作为社会学的乌托邦、异托邦、恶托邦或理想国的阅读的窠臼，把后现代历史元小说看成是一种娱乐性为主的言辞游戏，聚焦发现新的伦理景观而不是文本意义。

Works Cited

- 陈世丹：《美国后现代主义小说论》。北京：中国人民大学出版社，2019年。
[Chen Shidan. *Postmodernism Novels*. Beijing: China Renmin UP, 2019.]
- 陈晓明：《不死的纯文学》。北京：北京大学出版社，2007年。
[Chen Xiaoming. *Immortal Pure Literature*. Beijing: Peking UP, 2007.]
- 特里·伊格尔顿：《文学事件》，阴志科译。郑州：河南大学出版社，2017年。
[Eagleton, Terry. *The Event of Literature*, translated by Yin Zhike. Zhengzhou: Hena UP, 2017.]
- Erlich, Victor. *Russian Formalism: History-Doctrine* (3rd edition). London: Yale UP, 1981.
- 威廉·福克纳：《押沙龙，押沙龙！》，李文俊译。上海：上海译文出版社，2004年。
[Faulkner, William. *Absalom, Absalom!*, translated by Li Wenjun. Shanghai: Shanghai Translation Publishing House, 2004.]
- Gale, Richard. "The Fictive Use Of Language." *Philosophy* 46 (1971): 324-340.
- 龚见明：《文学本体论：从文学审美语言论文学》。桂林：广西师范大学出版社，1998年。
[Gong Jianming. *Literary Ontology: Aesthetizing Linguistic Literature from a Literary Perspective*. Guilin: Guangxi Normal UP, 1988.]
- Goodman, Nelson. *Ways of World Making*. Indianapolis: Hackett, 1978.
- Hassan, Ihab. *The Postmodern Turn: Essays in Postmodern Theory and Culture*. Columbus: Ohio State UP, 1987.
- 何成洲、但汉松：《文学的事件》。南京：南京大学出版社，2020年。
[He Chengzhou and Dan Hansong. *Literature as Event*. Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 2020.]
- 弗雷德里克·詹姆逊：《政治无意识：作为社会象征行为的叙事》，王逢振、陈永国译。北京：中国社会科学出版社，1999年。
[Jameson, Fredric. *The Political Unconscious*, translated by Wang Fengzhen and Chen Yongguo. Beijing: China Social Sciences Press, 1999.]
- Jenkins, Keith. *Why History?: Ethics and Postmodernity*. New York: Routledge, 1999.
- 江飞：《文学性：雅各布森语言诗学研究》。北京：人民出版社，2019年。
[Jiang Fei. *Literariness: A Study of Roman Jakobson's Linguistics Poetics*. Beijing: People's Publishing House, 2019.]
- 姜德成、仪爱松：“诗性的历史言说——《押沙龙，押沙龙！》中的历史叙事解读”，《宁波大学学报（人文科学版）》5（2012）：70-74。
[Jiang Decheng and Yi Aisong. "Literature and History: A New Historicist Reading of *Absalom*,

- Absalom!*.” *Journal of Ningbo University (Liberal Arts Edition)* 5 (2012): 70-74.]
- Katerberg, William. “Is Big History a Movement Culture?.” *Journal of Big History* 1 (2018): 63-72.
- 尚·勒狄克:《史家与时间》,林铮译。台北:麦田出版社,2003年。
- [Leduc, Jean. *The Historian and Time*, translated by Lin Zheng. Chinese Taipei: Rye Field Publishing Co, 2003.]
- 李纪祥:《时间·历史·叙事》。兰州:兰州大学出版社,2004年。
- [Li Jixiang. *Time, History and Narrative*. Lanzhou: Lanzhou UP, 2004.]
- 廖颖:“从《文学死了吗》探析希利斯·米勒的文学观”,中国高校人文社会科学信息网,2018年9月10日<<https://www.sinoss.net/uploadfile/2018/0910>>。
- [Liao Ying. “Exploring Hillis Miller’s View of Literature from ‘Is Literature Dead?’” *Humanities and Social Sciences Information Network of Chinese Universities*. 10 Sept. 2018. Available at: <https://www.sinoss.net/uploadfile/2018/0910>. Accessed 29 May. 2024.]
- 琳达·哈琴:《后现代历史诗学:历史·理论·小说》,李杨、李锋译。南京:南京大学出版社,2009年。
- [Linda Hutcheon. *Postmodern Historical Poetics: History·Theory·Novel*, translated by Li Yang and Li Feng. Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 2009.]
- 柳鸣九:《从现代主义到后现代主义》。北京:中国社会科学出版社,1994年。
- [Liu Mingjiu. *Modernism to Postmodernism*. Beijing: China Social Sciences Press, 1994.]
- 约翰·麦克尼尔等:《人类之网:鸟瞰世界历史》,王进星等译。北京:北京大学出版社,2011年。
- [McNeil, John et al. *The Human Web: A bird’s—Eye View of World History*, translated by Wang Jinxing et al. Beijing: Peking UP, 2011.]
- 王曦:“‘年代错位’与多重事件性:朗西埃论历史叙事的‘诗学程序’”,《文艺研究》5(2020):15-26。
- [Wang Xi. “‘Anachronism’ and Multiple Temporality: Rancière’s Analysis of ‘Poetic Procedure’ in Historical Narrative.” *Literature & Art Studies* 5 (2020): 15-26.]
- White, Hayden. “The Value of Narrativity in the Representation of Reality.” *Critical Inquiry* 1 (1980): 5-27.
- 海登·怀特:《后现代历史叙事学》,陈永国、张万娟译。北京:中国社会科学出版社,2003年。
- [White, Hayden. *Postmodern Historical Narratology*, translated by Chen Yongguo and Zhang Wanjuan. Beijing: China Social Sciences Press, 2003.]
- 杨梓露:“海登·怀特历史诗学的时间性机制分析”,《西南民族大学学报(人文社会科学版)》5(2018):182-188。
- [Yang Zilu. “An Analysis of the Mechanisms of Temporality in Hayden White’s Historical Poetics.” *Journal of Southwest Minzu University (Humanities and Social Sciences Edition)* 5 (2018): 182-188.]
- 虞建华:“小说、历史与美国文学的历史批判”,《英美文学论丛》2(2022):143-153。
- [Yu Jianhua. “Fiction, History and Fictional Re-examination of History.” *English and American Literary*

Studies 2 (2022): 143-153.]

虞建华等：《历史、政治与文学书写》。上海：上海外语教育出版社，2019 年。

[Yu Jianhua et al. *History, Politics and Literary Writing*. Shanghai: Shanghai Foreign Language Education Press, 2019.]

张军：《可能世界叙事学》。苏州：苏州大学出版社，2011 年。

[Zhang Jun. *Narratology of Possible Worlds*. Suzhou: Suzhou UP, 2011.]

张谡：“以伦理为轴心的转义”，《文学跨学科研究》6（2022）：677-689。

[Zhang Su. “An Ethical Axis Paraphrasing.” *Interdisciplinary Study of Literature* 6 (2022) : 677-689]

《无名的裘德》中裘德的伦理选择与身份建构

Jude's Ethical Choice and Identity Construction in *Jude the Obscure*

艾士薇 (Ai Shiwei)

内容摘要：《无名的裘德》是哈代创作的最后一部长篇小说，叙述裘德从农村进入城市追求理想的伦理选择和从农民到产业工人的身份转变过程。根据文学伦理学批评的主要观点，人生道路就是不断建构新的伦理身份和做出伦理选择的过程。裘德试图通过自学成为大学生或从事圣职以建构其跨阶层的伦理身份，通过他与追求自由的淑的婚姻以实现其自由人的伦理身份，都因不符合维多利亚时代晚期的伦理环境而遭遇失败。裘德的伦理选择既是对当时腐朽教育体制和虚伪婚姻制度的挑战，也是对资本主义制度压制人才的批判。哈代通过裘德伦理选择失败事实的叙述和评说，让读者从中获得教诲，批判性地认识维多利亚晚期社会体系的本质，并为自己在生活中做出正确的伦理选择提供参考。

关键词：《无名的裘德》；哈代；伦理选择；伦理身份；身份建构

作者简介：艾士薇，武汉大学文学院副教授，主要从事西方文论、欧洲文学与文化研究。

Title: Jude's Ethical Choice and Identity Construction in *Jude the Obscure*

Abstract: *Jude the Obscure*, the last full-length novel written by Thomas Hardy, describes Jude's ethical choice to move from the countryside to the city in pursuit of his ideals and the process of the identity transformation from farmer to industrial worker. According to the main concepts of ethical literary criticism, the path of life is the process of constantly constructing new ethical identities and making ethical choices. Jude's attempts to construct a cross-class ethical identity through self-education, aspiring to become a university student or enter the priesthood, and his endeavor to establish an ethical identity as a free man through marriage with Sue, who ardently pursues freedom, were ultimately unsuccessful due to their incongruity with the prevailing ethical milieu of late Victorian society. Jude's ethical choices pose a challenge to the decadent education system and hypocritical marriage system of that era, while also serving as a critique of the capitalist system's suppression of talent. Through Hardy's narration and commentary on Jude's failed ethical decision,

readers can gain a critical understanding of the nature of the late Victorian social system and find guidance for making appropriate ethical choices in their own lives.

Keywords: *Jude the Obscure*; Thomas Hardy; ethical choice; ethical identity; identity construction

Author: AI Shiwei is Associate Professor at School of Chinese Language and Literature, Wuhan University (Wuhan 430072, China). Her academic research focuses on Western literary theory, European literature and culture (Email: icevy@whu.edu.cn).

哈代最后一部长篇小说《无名的裘德》（*Jude the Obscure*, 1895, 后文简称《裘德》）出版后，遭到批评界的严厉抨击，被指责为“一本淫荡的小说”和“最伤风败俗的作品之一”（聂珍钊，《悲戚而刚毅的艺术家》234）。这体现的是当时维多利亚社会末期新旧价值观和社会文化之间的激烈斗争。20世纪70年代后，《裘德》成为各种文艺理论和文化研究的试验场。西方评论者尤为关注作品中的女性与婚姻主题，如米歇尔·索普（Michael Thorpe）强调淑在作品中的重要性，认为她“不是‘新女性’的变体，而是一种令人不安的形式，她与男性在智力和性方面的关系都是‘新’的”（Thorpe 67），甚至将《无名的裘德》更名为《无名的淑》（“Sue the Obscure”）。威廉·R. 高姿（William R. Goetz）认为，婚姻主题“不只是社会主题，还是一种制度，它的形式与哈代试图创作的小说形式吻合”（Goetz 192）。中国评论界重在探讨《裘德》的社会性与伦理问题，前者从社会历史维度探讨《裘德》，指出“小说描写的教育主体触及到资产阶级社会的痛处，但是使资本主义最难容忍的却是小说中宣扬的违反传统道德和宗教信条的婚姻观念”（《悲戚而刚毅的艺术家》248）；后者通过文学伦理学批评探讨《裘德》，聚焦家庭伦理与婚姻问题，强调人物的悲剧命运“既是当时传统家庭伦理的作用结果，也是他们处理家庭伦理关系不当的致命惩罚”（刘茂生 陈琴 42）。

在哈代研究中，我们不能忽视《裘德》是哈代“第一次对现代工人阶级悲惨命运所做的艺术表现，以及对资本主义世界中的教育、婚姻、道德、宗教等重大社会问题进行的沉痛思考”（聂珍钊，《悲戚而刚毅的艺术家》237）。哈代本人也强调整部作品“首先涉及一个穷学生为获得大学学位而付出的努力，其次才是两段不幸婚姻的悲剧性问题”（Millgate 101）。不论是为接受教育的努力，还是因爱情导致的悲剧，《裘德》都是一部涉及青年工人无产者成长的小说。文学伦理学批评认为，人生道路就是不断建构新的伦理身份和做出伦理选择的过程。“伦理选择是从伦理上解决人的身份问题，不仅要本质上把人同兽区别开来，而且还需要从责任、义务和道德等价值方面对人的身份进行确认”（聂珍钊，《文学伦理学批评导论》263）。本文将运用文学伦理学批评理论与术语，探讨裘德在无比复杂的伦理环境中如何通

过一次次伦理选择建构自己新的伦理身份的过程。

一、裘德跨阶层伦理身份的建构

人类在自然选择后从形式上确立了自我身份，之后进入伦理选择阶段。¹ 伦理选择是“特定环境或语境中对如何做人的选择，也是对人的身份的建构和确认。伦理选择活动往往是由人的身份决定的，不同身份的人往往会作出不同的选择，不同的选择也建构新的身份”（聂珍钊，“文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构” 77）。裘德在成长过程中不断进行伦理选择，目的在于建构并确认新的跨越阶层的伦理身份。

年少的裘德在玛丽格伦生活期间，主要帮他老姑太太经营的面包店送货，偶尔打点儿零工，以维持生计。裘德本来可以安于世事，未来继承老姑太太的面包店，像大多数普通的玛丽格伦人一样平凡地生活。但是，他受到了老师费劳孙的感召，有了新的人生理想，决心开始新的人生选择。他的计划是先取得大学毕业的身份，然后再到教会从事圣职。他选择回到基督寺生活，是因为那里靠近大学，能够感受大学的崇高。自此以后，基督寺便像灯塔一般照亮了裘德生活，成为他建构自己基督寺大学生伦理身份的重要因素。“伦理身份有多重分类，如以血亲为基础的身份、以伦理关系为基础的身份、以道德为基础的身份、以集体和社会关系为基础的身份、以从事的职业为基础的身份等”（聂珍钊，《文学伦理学批评导论》263-264）。裘德想要转变的正是以职业为基础的身份，他不甘于平庸，不想一辈子留在玛丽格伦，希望通过自学跨越社会阶层，开始大学生的生活。他的这种选择，开启了其以集体和社会关系为基础的身份转变。

为了建构新的伦理身份，裘德做出的第一个伦理选择就是离开玛丽格伦前往基督寺。为了能在基督寺生存并实现学业上的目标，裘德选择了建筑事业。他先向“只会做低贱活儿的石匠”学习，随后跟一位教堂建筑师学教堂的石工活，但从未忘记劳作“只是一种手段，靠它维持一时的生活，好来准备他自己以为更合乎个人志趣的伟大事业”（43）²。当裘德的石工技术越来越高超，并接受工厂主雇佣时，他已经实现了“从作为一个农民阶级的代表向一个城市工人的转变”（聂珍钊，《悲戚而刚毅的艺术家》237）。但裘德深知这一伦理身份的转变只是过渡状态，并非其最终目标，他仍需努力实现大学生甚至是知识分子身份，因而，必须前往基督寺。

当裘德来到基督寺，他生活的伦理环境发生了巨大转变。在他心中，基督寺“是思想活动和宗教活动惟一无二的中心——是咱们这一国里知识食粮

1 参见 Nie zhenzhao, “Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory,” *Forum for World Literature Studies* 2 (2021): 189-207; Nie Zhenzhao, “Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection,” *Forum for World Literature Studies* 3 (2021): 383-398.

2 本文《无名的裘德》引文均来自 托马斯·哈代：《无名的裘德》，张若谷译（北京：商务印书馆，2022年）。以下只标注页码，不再一一说明。

和精神食粮的仓库”（159）。他自信地认为，只要工作和努力，就能在基督寺拥有一席之地。但是，无论裘德如何奋斗，都无法改变他工人身份的事实。裘德的同乡约翰一针见血地指出：“那种地方不是给你这样的人预备的——那只是给那些有钱的人预备的”（159）。作为工人，裘德无法在劳作一天后集中精力学习；作为自学者，他也无法完全弄懂艰深的书本内容。求学的强烈欲望促使裘德鼓起勇气给大学院长们写信，希望能够得到指点。他的信如石沉大海，遭到长久的无视后，裘德终于收到了一位院长的回信。与裘德的期望相反，院长并非鼓励他勇往直前，而是说他“既身为工人，则谨守本分，安于旧业，较见异思迁，别作他图者，于世路之成功上进，自有更多之机会”（165）。马修·阿诺德（Matthew Arnold）曾指出，“文化寻求消除阶级，使世界上最优秀的思想和知识传遍四海，使普天下的人都生活在美好与光明的气氛之中”，让人们得到思想浸润且不受束缚，“文化人是平等的真正使徒”（阿诺德 34）。院长回信的意图不是为了鼓励裘德求学上进，更不是为了消除阶级偏见和把知识传给普天下的所有人，而是拒绝平民入学，固化阶级差异。他希望维持英国传统绅士教育的纯粹性，保护有产者受教育的特权，因此警告裘德按工人身份行事，切莫妄图跨越阶层和奢求进入大学。

在基督寺向裘德关闭大门求学无望时，他试图借道宗教改变工人无产者的身份，实现跨阶层的伦理身份建构。裘德内心清楚，他研究神学，梦想做主教，不过是他野心的一部分。哈代在小说中直白地评价裘德的选择说，只是出于“飞黄腾达的野心，不过披着一层宗教的外衣就是了”（180）。裘德自己也意识到，他的计划一开始“还含有一些高尚的动机，但是到后来，却恐怕完全变成了往上爬的野心了”（180-181）。为了实现目标，裘德的阅读策略也发生了很大变化。他最初没有直接阅读《圣经》，而是阅读神学学者和神学家、主教的阐释著作。但是在淑看来，长老们或主教们做出的注解，即《新约》“每章前面的提要，都把那些热烈情诗的真意歪曲了”，伟大热烈诗歌里表现的人与人的欢乐与自然之爱，被他们“用宗教的抽象话把它涂饰起来”（216）。除了神学家或大主教曲解《圣经》之外，裘德同时代的神职人员也罔顾信仰，将金钱看得重于一切。裘德曾被维赛司一位由基督寺培养的音乐家所创作的赞美诗感动，于是产生了拜访他的念头。然而，当音乐家发现裘德只是穷人，与体面衣着并不相符时，他的态度发生了转变。音乐家似乎并不在乎裘德对自己作品的敬意，而是不断抱怨没钱的烦恼，向他散发即将开业的广告货品目录。

由此可见，文化与文化人、教育与大学、宗教与圣职的本质，在物欲横流、阶级壁垒高耸的维多利亚时代发生了改变，早已不是原本追求平等、教化民众或拯救世人的教育与宗教，而成为了上层社会的特权且趋于保守，宗教则与金钱同谋。在《裘德》之前，哈代倾向于从启蒙主义角度思考问题，认为威

塞克斯农民的悲惨命运与落后意识主要是因为缺乏教育造成的。但是在《裘德》里，哈代深刻揭示了一个残酷的事实，资本主义社会中教育与大学只是有产者的特权。为了维护这份特权，特权阶层将众多平民子弟关在大学门外，因此底层民众缺乏的不只是教育，还缺乏接受教育的基本权益。从表面上看，裘德想到基督寺接受教育，是为了建构大学生的伦理身份，或者通过考试鉴定，获取神职人员的伦理身份。实际上，他选择上大学和当主教，挑战的是当时社会固有的阶级秩序，这既是对阶级鸿沟的逾越，也是对自己建构新身份努力。

二、裘德自由人伦理身份的选择

裘德在追求人生理想的伦理选择过程中，既经历了从农民到工人的身份选择和转换，也经历了从传统婚姻到自由婚姻的不同婚姻角色的转换。在裘德与艾拉白拉、淑的两段婚恋选择中，裘德的自由选择与伦理选择交错出现，其伦理身份也在不断更迭。在经历了第一次婚姻的失败后、在淑的思想启发下，裘德逐渐认清了维多利亚时代婚姻制度的腐朽本质，进而抵制婚姻，试图建构其追求自由的伦理身份。

青年裘德本打算通过自学去基督寺读书，却因有一天在回家路上被艾拉白拉有意挑逗而改变了人生规划。显然，他的伦理选择脱离了理性的引导，注意力从学习古典文学的梦想转移到身材丰腴的艾拉白拉身上。裘德受原欲驱动，为了自由选择，放弃了最初的大学生身份的建构。所谓自由选择“是本能的外在表现形式，是兽性因子发挥作用的结果”（聂珍钊，“伦理选择概念的两种涵义辨析”21）。裘德在兽性因子的驱使下与艾拉白拉尝试禁果，放弃学业上的选择深陷肉欲之中。这是裘德在兽性因子主导下做出的错误选择，所以裘德尽管当时也意识到艾拉白拉并无可取之处，但仍选择与她结婚。婚后，裘德的伦理身份从积极向上、努力学习的单身汉变成了为养家糊口、放弃学术的丈夫。他开始反思婚姻制度，为什么人要因一时本能而放弃一直以来的规划、放弃进步和为社会做贡献的可能，他察觉到“这种仪式，一定有问题”（83）。错误选择的结果必然导致婚姻的失败。艾拉白拉发现裘德无法满足其物欲，便选择了离开，在澳洲找到新欢。裘德认清了这场婚姻的本质，毫不犹豫地选择结束了婚姻。

如果说裘德同艾拉白拉的婚姻是出于兽性因子主导的本能，而他对淑的爱情则是在人性因子主导下的理性引领。裘德结束了同艾拉白拉的婚姻后，决定离开玛丽格伦前往基督寺时，继续自己大学生的身份建构。抵达基督寺后，裘德见到淑，又开始了一段新的影响他的身份建构的恋情。在哈代的笔下，淑是一个超凡脱俗的人、没有凡心的神和没有肉体的精灵，她的智力出类拔萃。裘德认为，淑能够帮助他建构新的身份以实现人生目标，让他获得心灵的共鸣和生活的安慰。两人相处与相恋的过程中，裘德并没受到兽性因子的驱使，仅

选择做对方的情人，而是保持理性，追求精神上的伴侣，不让自己的行为逾越道德。他们在分别结束各自的婚姻之前，都能在道德规范之路建构精神恋人的身份，互相鼓励追求人生的目标。

伦理选择需符合伦理环境或语境的道德要求，但不同的生活有不同的道德标准。道德标准可分为两种，“一种是自我选择的标准，即一个人按照自己选择的标准进行选择的主观标准。一种是环境和语境标准，即自我选择应符合环境和语境的客观标准”（聂珍钊，“伦理选择概念的两种涵义辨析”21）。裘德与淑对是否结婚的伦理选择便是两种道德标准博弈的结果。淑表达了对婚姻的恐惧，认为婚姻不过是铁一般的契约，最终会磨灭彼此的柔情，甚至认为裘德若只按照“盖有政府印信的文件统一来爱”，她也“按照政府的许可”接受裘德的爱，“太可怕、太腌臢、太叫人恶心了”（367）。我们不能说淑的选择是非理性的，只是她的伦理选择是基于自我选择的标准，是按照自己的信仰和判断做出自由选择。裘德评价淑“完全是一个虚幻空灵、没有肉体的人（……）几乎丝毫没有兽类的情欲：所以你做这种事情，能够听从理性”（368-369）。

同淑的自我选择相比，裘德的选择更看重当时的环境和语境标准，试图按照维多利亚晚期的伦理规则赋予他同淑的这份感情的合法性。在办理结婚手续的过程中，对于选择遵循何时环境或语境的伦理标准时，裘德开始了伦理思考。根据小说的描述，英国有两种合法的婚姻仪式：一是在监督登记局签字画押组建家庭；一是在教堂里向上帝承诺结为夫妻。在裘德和淑的想像里，监督登记局一定是安静、温馨、美好的，然而他们看到的却是另一种混乱和充满暴力的景象：满脸凶气的大兵、满脸愁容和鼻青脸肿的怀有身孕的新娘、醉醺醺的女人带着刚从监狱出来的男人。这些男女并非为两情相悦而组建家庭，而只是为那一纸契约。看见这种情景，裘德都不由地感慨说：“那个地方太丑恶了：它叫你心灰意冷，也同样叫我心灰意冷”（406）。随后，他们又在教堂里看到了一对正在举办婚礼的中产阶级男女，婚礼好看、有趣，但新娘的誓词却念得机械，新娘似乎并不理解这些字句的意义，如同古代即将牺牲的小牛。这一场景让裘德和淑分别想到了他们的第一场婚姻，认识到这种契约式婚姻或许对很多人适用，但对他们的爱情追求毫无益处。他们的婚姻选择显然远远走在时代的前面，超越当时的世俗观念。淑一针见血地指出：“再过五十年，再过一百年，那现在这一对儿的后人，在行动和感觉方面，要比咱们现在还觉得别扭。他们要比咱们现在还清楚地看到扰攘的人群都是些，跟我们一样的有形之体，肮脏龌龊地生长繁殖，他们那时候就要不在生儿养女了”（409）。可以说，他们的选择在思想观念方面超越当时的人50甚至100年，意识到永恒誓言的危险性和资本主义婚姻制度的腐朽本质，他们深切认识到男女皆为虚伪婚姻的受害者。正是他们的先进观念，裘德和淑选择拒绝婚姻。通过拒绝婚姻，裘德最终建构了自己自由人的伦理身

份。他希望能作为一位自由人爱着同为自由人的淑，而不是像维多利亚时代众多的家庭，将婚姻变成契约，让妻子成为附属品。裘德的伦理选择让他和淑成为了彼此相爱且平等、独立的自由人。

哈代在给好友的信中曾谈到裘德与淑的爱情：“尽管她有了孩子，她与裘德亲昵从没有超出偶然的程度，即使在他们一起生活（……）除了快到结尾时，他们各人有自己的房间。（……）他从来没有真正随心所欲的占有过她”（Hardy 272）。哈代根据超前的婚恋观念塑造裘德和淑这对自由人的形象，描写他们自由的婚恋选择和自由人身份建构，即使在今天也能带来启发。

三、维多利亚晚期伦理环境与裘德伦理选择的冲突

裘德追求社会上的跨阶层伦理身份以及婚恋上自由人的伦理身份，代表了当时的工人无产者追求自由生活的美好愿望。但在当时的伦理环境里，裘德艰难的伦理选择注定了失败。如果我们“回到历史的伦理现场，进入文学的伦理环境或伦理语境中，站在当时的伦理立场上解读和阐释文学作品”（聂珍钊，《文学伦理学批评导论》7），就会发现维多利亚晚期的社会伦理环境，是裘德决定如何进行伦理选择的重要因素。

伦理环境指“文学作品存在的历史空间”，而对文学作品的深入解读，则要“在特定的伦理环境中分析和批评文学作品，对文学作品进行客观的伦理阐释”（聂珍钊，《文学伦理学批评导论》256）。裘德所处的英国，随着工业革命的完成，社会结构发生了巨大变化，从传统农业社会转向了现代工业社会。无数农民变成了农业工人，依靠出卖劳动力维持生计。在现代潮流的推动下，大量农民从农村汇聚到城市，传统的贵族乡绅家长制转变为城市中冷漠的雇佣关系。尽管裘德的身份从一个农民变成了一个现代工人，有了更高的人生追求，但他只能靠工厂雇佣和出售劳动力谋生。裘德认识到要实现美好的理想，只能通过知识改变自己的命运，因此他和做出创造条件接受大学教育的选择，企图建构自己大学生的身份。

但是，英国的教育环境决定了他无法建构自己的大学生身份。19世纪的英国教育主要有两种体系：精英教育与大众教育。大众教育是为了让劳动者成为合格的劳动力所设置的基础教育；精英教育的目的则是“为教俗两界及军队等输送合格官吏”，但“受教育的权利一直为上流社会所独享，精英教育旨在培养绅士素质”且“收费昂贵”（钱乘旦 292）。精英教育中不可或缺的基础就是学习古典语言。裘德如果想要进入大学或从事圣职，就必须学习古希腊语或拉丁语。通过自学，裘德意识到他“所要学的那种文字的文法书，基本上要包括一种密码特性的规律、成方或者线索”（34），语言的密码特性成了隔绝了平民与有产阶级的天然屏障。因此，裘德的自学不只是对个人学习能力的考验，更是对财富造成的阶级鸿沟的跨越，而这在维多利亚

时代是不被允许的。裘德被大学拒之门外并非是他的学习能力不强以及知识不够丰富,而是在维多利亚晚期或整个资本主义时代,阶级的差异是不可能通过个人的努力就能消除的,当时服务于上层社会的教育环境是难以改变的。

英国的宗教环境也不允许裘德建构自己的牧师身份。裘德无法在英国的教育体制下实现人生理想,于是转而谋求圣职,以建构新的伦理身份。裘德企图建构牧师身份的选择也是当时伦理环境的产物。19世纪英国仍是一个虔诚的国度,尽管教会内部的腐败和达尔文的进化论给宗教带了很大冲击,但人们相信国家的繁荣、自由和稳定都源于对基督教的信仰。在英国,做牧师是大多数青年学人的职业选择。因此,裘德选择圣职不仅能改变自己的阶级身份,而且能得到上层阶级的认可,从而实现自己的人生理想。但是在维多利亚时代,圣职是精英学生的主要选择,而作为一位现代工人,裘德即使具备同精英大学生一样的能力和知识,也是不被允许进入这一职业的。

在婚姻爱情方面,英国的宗教道德环境也不允许裘德自由选择,实现自己的婚姻理想。对裘德来说,无论是进大学建构大学生的伦理身份,还是谋求圣职选择宗教道路,裘德的选择都失败了。裘德发现无论自己怎样努力和具备了可以超越大学生的知识,他也无法改变自己的产业工人的身份,于是回到现实之路,希望在同淑的恋爱中实现自己的婚姻理想。在经历了同艾拉白拉建立在情欲基础之上的失败婚姻之后,裘德转而选择追求以共同感情为基础的婚姻关系。在裘德眼里,淑是“一个没有凡心的仙女”和“游戏人间的精灵”(505)。她天真可爱,追求柏拉图式的爱情,讨厌任何肉体之爱,把两性之爱完全看成是人的一种精神上的联系。裘德对爱情的追求同她一样,反对契约式婚姻,于是她选择离开丈夫费劳孙而同裘德生活在一起。她认为,若法律法令让人们苦恼,人们就完全没有必要遵守它,何况契约是人定的,也一定能取消它。淑的丈夫费劳孙认为,裘德和淑的爱情里是异乎寻常的亲密或同情,不含任何粗俗的成分,“他们最大的愿望只是要在一块儿,两个互相领略彼此的感情、彼此的幻想和彼此的愿望”(331)。他们的爱既是柏拉图式的精神之爱,也是雪莱式的心灵相通之爱。

裘德和淑的婚姻选择是对传统道德、宗教和国家法律保护的不合理婚姻制度的挑战,但是在当时宗教道德环境中是不被允许的。尽管他们按照自己的意愿共同选择了自由婚姻并为此做出了巨大努力,但是他们无法脱离现实环境,无法打破宗教道德的桎梏。最后,淑选择了向现实环境屈服,裘德也身心俱疲地在穷困潦倒中死去。

在哈代的小说中,裘德建构跨阶层伦理身份和自由人伦理身份的努力失败了,上演了一出伦理选择的悲剧。为了实现人生理想,裘德和淑怀抱建构新的伦理身份的理想,做过多种伦理选择的尝试,但最后他们都失败了。哈代通过解剖裘德和淑的伦理选择的叙事范例,描述了他们建构新的伦理身份努力,“在被教会和资产阶级视为不道德的人和事中寻找美和善”(聂珍钊,《文

学伦理学批评导论》203)。裘德和淑失败了，但是他们让读者们批判性地看到了资本主义社会制度的残酷、教育体制的虚伪和婚姻制度的伪善，为我们借助文学认识历史和反思当今社会以及在复杂的伦理环境中做出正确的伦理选择提供启示。

Work Cited

- 阿诺德：《文化与无政府状态》，韩敏中译。北京：生活·读书·三联书店，2008年。
- [Arnold, Matthew. *Culture and Anarchy*, translated by Han Minzhong. Beijing: SDX Joint Publishing Company, 2008.]
- Goetz, William R.. "The Felicity and Infelicity of Marriage in the *Jude the Obscure*." *Nineteenth-Century Fiction* 2 (1983): 189-213.
- Hardy, Florence Emily. *The Life of Thomas Hardy 1814-1920*, London and Basingstoke: Macmillan & Co Ltd., 1962.
- 托马斯·哈代：《无名的裘德》，张若谷译。北京：商务印书馆，2022年。
- [Hardy, Thomas. *Jude The Obscure*, translated by Zhang Ruogu. Beijing: The Commercial Press, 2022.]
- 刘茂生、陈琴：“《无名的裘德》中家庭伦理解读”，《世界文学评论》1（2010）：39-42。
- [Liu Maosheng and Chen Qin. "The Family Ethics in *Jude the Obscure*." *World Literature Review* 1 (2010): 39-42.]
- Millgate, Michael. *Thomas Hardy Selected Letters*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1990.
- 聂珍钊：“伦理选择概念的两种涵义辨析”，《外国文学研究》6（2022）：15-25。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. "Analyzing the Implications of Ethical Selection and Ethical Choice." *Foreign Literature Studies* 6 (2022): 15-25.]
- 。“Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory.” *Forum for World Literature Studies* 2 (2021): 189-207.
- 。“Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection.” *Forum for World Literature Studies* 3 (2021): 383-398.
- ：《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京：北京大学出版社，2014年。
- [——. *Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism*. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- ：《悲戚而刚毅的艺术家：托马斯·哈代小说研究》。武汉：华中师范大学出版社，1992年。
- [——. *Thomas Hardy: A Study of His Novels*. Wuhan: Central China Normal UP, 1992.]
- ：“文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构”，《中国社会科学》10（2020）：71-92+205-206。
- [——. "Value Choice and the Theoretical Construction of Ethical Literary Criticism." *Social Sciences in China* 10 (2020): 71-92+205-206.]
- 钱乘旦编：《英国通史》第5卷。南京：江苏人民出版社，2016年。
- [Qian Chengdan, ed. *A History of England* Vol. 5. Nanjing: Jiangsu People's Publishing House, 2016.]
- Thorpe, Michael. "Sue the Obscure: Hardy's Female Readers." *The Thomas Hardy Journal* 3 (1995): 66-77.

混沌世界中伦理认知的“变革”：

解读芥川龙之介的《罗生门》

The “Transformation” of Ethical Cognition in a Chaotic World: An Analysis of Ryunosuke Akutagawa’s “Rashomon”

霍 斐 (Huo Fei)

内容摘要：芥川龙之介经典短篇《罗生门》由明暗两条对峙伦理线——“白昼”的秩序内伦理与“黑夜”的秩序外伦理——并行展开叙事。在小说中，平安时代下等武士“家将”面临饿死或做强盗的两难选择，因受武士伦理身份和性格缺陷的束缚，而没有勇气做出抉择。在罗生门上的混沌世界里，“家将”与拔死人头发的他者“老太婆”相遇，由此展开不同伦理观的对决：家将认为拔死人头发是不可饶恕的“恶”；老太婆认为为了“活命”可不择手段。最终，家将选择扒掉老太婆的衣服，走向“恶”。这种“恶”旨在从秩序外部破坏旧秩序，以重构新秩序，实现伦理认知变革，从而获得新生。

关键词：《罗生门》；芥川龙之介；伦理困境；伦理选择；伦理认知；文学伦理学批评

作者简介：霍斐，西北大学外国语学院副教授，主要研究领域为日本近代文学。本文系教育部人文社会科学研究一般项目“日本人建构的‘鲁迅像’研究”【项目批号：23YJC752009】的阶段性成果。

Title: The “Transformation” of Ethical Cognition in a Chaotic World: An Analysis of Ryunosuke Akutagawa’s “Rashomon”

Abstract: The world-renowned short story “Rashomon” unfolds its narrative along two contrasting ethical lines: the “daylight” within the order and the “night” beyond the order. Set in the fictional historical period of the Heian era, a low-ranking samurai retainer was confronted with the dilemma of “starving to death” or “becoming a robber.” To be specific, his hesitation to make a decision was due to the constraints of his ethical identity as a samurai and his sentimental personality. At this time, on the Rashomon gate in a chaotic world, the retainer encountered an old woman plucking hair from dead bodies. This sparked off a confrontation with the retainer

believing plucking hair from the dead an unforgivable “evil,” while the old woman argued that survival justified any means. Inspired by this, the retainer committed the violent act of stripping the old woman of her clothes, officially descending into “evil.” However, this “evil” disrupted the old order from the outside and reconstructed a new ethical framework, thereby achieving a “transformation” of ethical cognition, and thus a new life.

Keywords: “Rashomon”; ethical dilemma; ethical predicament; ethical choice; ethical cognition; ethical literary criticism

Author: Huo Fei is Associate Professor at the School of Foreign Languages, Northwestern University (Xi'an 710069, China). Her academic research focuses on modern Japanese literature (Email: huofei728@163.com).

《罗生门》（『羅生門』，1915）是芥川龙之介（Ryunosuke Akutagawa，下简称“芥川”）早期创作的经典短篇小说。在发表之初，小说未受到日本学界较多关注，毋宁说几乎被“完全漠视，仅有只言片语的私下评论”（三好行雄 64）¹。然而，作者芥川始终自信地认为：“在自己所有作品中，这部小说完成度最高”（『芥川龙之介资料集2』511）。特别是小说开头“某日黄昏，有一家将，茫然地来到罗生门下等着雨停”（《罗生门》7）²，一语奠定了小说的时空构造——时间是“白昼”（秩序内）向“黑夜”（秩序外）转换的“黄昏”时刻；空间是雨夜的罗生门。在《罗生门》之后，芥川又创作一系列以“黄昏”为开头的作品，如《桔子》（『蜜柑』，1919）和《杜子春》（『杜子春』，1920）等，由此被日本学界称为“黄昏作家”³，并登上日本文学“新思潮派”的首席宝座。该流派的创作主旨是“洞察和突显社会的黑暗面与人的原风景”（秋山虔 169），而《罗生门》恰恰是贯彻这一创作理念的代表作。

《罗生门》讲述了日本平安时代一位下等武士“家将”，在面对“饿死”或“做强盗”的选择时，因受武士伦理身份和性格缺陷的束缚，没有勇气做出抉择而陷入两难的故事。对此，吉田精一（Seiichi Yosida）从伦理视角出发，指出“芥川在正义感和利己主义的双重心理驱使下，塑造了一个无法彻底行善或做恶的、变化不定的人物形象”（318）。驹尺喜美（Kimi Komashaku）反驳道：作者在此建构的“并非是无法贯彻行善或做恶的、变化不定的人物形象，而是善恶并存的、处于矛盾体的人类本身（……）作者是站在认知者的视角，洞察矛盾同时并存的人自身”（30-31）。三好行雄（Yukio Miyoshi）则直指问题核心，强调说：作者虽用“勇气”一词表现家将犹豫不决的行为，但真正

1 外文引文均出自笔者译。

2 本文有关《罗生门》的引文均来自芥川龙之介：《罗生门》（东京：新潮社，1918年）。引文均出自笔者译。以下引文仅标注页码，不再一一说明。

3 参见平岡敏夫：『芥川龍之介抒情の美学』，東京：大修館書店，1982年，第203页。

使其举棋不定的根源是作为人的最后伦理或超伦理。作者的叙事动机是如何使读者跳出既有认知世界，而非徘徊于感性诉诸。¹不难看出，吉田精一和驹尺喜美仅聚焦问题表象，而三好行雄则直指作者叙事动机，揭示出主体如何“变革”既有认知世界。上述见解，无疑对深化《罗生门》的理解很有启发，而本文旨在探讨在直面超出秩序法则的超伦理语境下，作为下等武士的家将与普通百姓老太婆相遇后，二者如何通过“自我”与“他者”的对话，冲破伦理身份的禁忌领域获得新生，以期为现代人直面伦理困境时“变革”自身伦理认知，做出理性选择提供启示。

一、秩序内的伦理困境：是“饿死”还是“做强盗”

《罗生门》中的京都市连年发生地震、台风、火灾和疫情等灾害，路旁和土墙下随处可见死者尸体，这些无人问津的尸体，被随意扔到罗生门上供乌鸦啄食。在此情形下，有一家将被主人辞退，来到罗生门下等着雨停。其实，即使雨停家将也无去处。对家将而言，想要活下去就得解决生计问题，可直面饥荒的现实，横在其面前的只有两条路：“饿死”或者“做强盗”。家将预感到未来命运，只能选择后者，可又没有“勇气”，始终徘徊于“要么……”的反复中。由此，家将陷入伦理困境（ethical dilemma）。三好行雄指出：“正如独白 To be or not to be (……)，有人将其译为：是做，还是不做，这才是问题。的确，龙之介的家将酷似‘落魄的哈姆雷特’。在认知上，他明知自己必须做什么，可站在罗生门一隅的家将，却被某种伦理封闭了他的行为(……)龙之介想带读者走出的是认知与思考法则的场所”(61-62)。此处，“封闭”住家将去“做强盗”的“某种伦理”显然是世俗的伦理道德，但从家将的伦理身份（ethical identity）来看，束缚其“做强盗”的原因还包括身为武士所拥有的伦理观。

“人的身份是一个人在社会中存在的标识，人需要承担身份赋予的责任和义务”（聂珍钊 263）。尽管家将是下等武士，但仍有责任和义务恪守“义、勇、仁、礼、诚、名誉、忠”七种价值观。²其中，所谓“勇”是指作为武士即使直面困难和威胁也能保持坚强和勇敢。三好行雄认为，“作者在此使用‘勇气’一词(……)是指作为人的最后伦理，也即超越性的道德准则”(62)。“作为人的最后伦理”是把人同兽区别开来的本质特质，即人所具有的伦理意识³。但这里显然忽略了家将的伦理身份，准确地说，家将的武士身份才是束缚他鼓起“勇气”去做强盗的禁忌根源。正因为如上伦理意识的存在，家将暂时未选择做强盗，处于做“人”与做“兽”的临界点上。

1 参见三好行雄：『芥川龍之介論』，東京：筑摩書房，1981年，第62页。

2 参见新渡戸稲造：『武士道』，東京：岩波書店，1938年，第58页。

3 参见聂珍钊：《文学伦理学批评导论》，北京：北京大学出版社，2014年，第257页。

Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection," *Forum for World Literature Studies* 3 (2021): 383-398.

为此，叙事者以“作者”的身份登场，从动物蟋蟀的处境出发，将家将的生存境遇视觉化：“雨中”的罗生门下，家将看见朱漆柱子上栖息着一只孤零零的蟋蟀，可京城寒风呼啸，已冷到需要火炉的季节，蟋蟀不一会儿就消失得无影无踪。此时的“雨声”好似仅仅是无限地延长时间，其实虚构的风景与家将的心境恰好重叠。海老井英次（Eiji Ebii）指出，“相对于罗生门上的尸体，徘徊于‘饿死’或‘做强盗’的家将之形象，暗示着生命本身。或者说，感慨人生无常的存在基调，显然是通过‘蟋蟀’的表象表现出来。即此处的‘蟋蟀’象征着被‘雨’无化和归于‘死亡’宿命，且与家将的感伤性格产生共鸣”（144）。在罗生门这一充满“无常”的场所，蟋蟀的印象像一面镜子将家将的生存境遇视觉化，那么蟋蟀的消失又意味着什么呢？为了解决这一问题，有必要考察罗生门上的时间设定。家将来到罗生门的时间是“黄昏”时分，成群的乌鸦像麻子似的盘旋于罗生门上空，争相啄食死人肉。在此，罗生门上“黄昏”的时间设定，将日常世界的生存空间一分为二：一方是代表秩序社会的白昼；另一方是象征混沌世界的黑夜。加之正下着大雨，罗生门就在黑夜和大雨的笼罩下，形成一个异空间的混沌世界。蟋蟀在异空间消失，无疑预示家将的未来命运。海老井英次认为，根据“作品情结的展开，‘蟋蟀’消失后登场的是老太婆。作为生命体的存在，二者虽具共通性，但如果说‘蟋蟀’意味着＜自然性＞，老太婆则象征着＜自由性＞，由此形成对应关系。在归于‘无’与‘死亡’的世界中，家将从沉迷于感伤中的‘蟋蟀’的生存状态，转向洋溢着意志和生命力的老太婆，无疑是‘罗生门’的主调”（144）。此观点洞悉到两个关键问题：一是家将形象与蟋蟀意象之间的投影关系。这与芥川对家将形象的刻画动机基本一致。芥川曾坦言：《罗生门》中探讨的是“伦理的问题，我想说的是，至少是像无教养式的凡夫俗子，其所持的伦理观，往往是随着情绪和感情变化而变化的产物，常常被当时所处的状况所左右”（『芥川龙之介资料集2』 546）。但正是其年轻而未定的伦理观，为他此后的认知“变革”奠定了基础。二是蟋蟀消失后，代之登场的老太婆与家将之间的内在关联问题又是什么呢？

二、秩序外的伦理混沌：异空间的认知冲突

处于伦理困境的家将打算到罗生门楼上休息一晚，再解决生计问题，于是缩着身体登上通往楼上的梯子。走到梯子的中段时，他发现楼上有微弱的“火光”，再往上走，便看到有火把在不停地移动。他像“壁虎”似的爬到楼梯口朝里望去，映入眼帘的却是死人堆里蹲着一个白发老太婆，像母猴给小猴子抓虱子一样，一根根得拔着死人长发。

对于此处的“梯子”，可做如下理解：首先，当主体“从某种生存状态进入另一种生存状态时，‘台阶和梯子’是实现这种可能的、连接两个断层世界的媒介”（平岡敏夫 23）。家将从楼下位移到楼上时，“梯子”成为连

接秩序的日常生活世界与混沌的非日常世界的“媒介”。其次，叙事者的叙事视角从处于食物链低端的蟋蟀，转向食物链顶端的捕食者：猫、壁虎和蜘蛛。这暗示着家将登上楼梯后，其伦理身份和认知意识将发生质的飞跃——不再是感伤蟋蟀命运的无常，而是由被动的弱者转向主动的强者。此时，映入家将眼帘的浑浊“火光”，正象征着家将无意识世界燃起的微茫的希望。

家将借助“火光”，看见老太婆正在拔死人头发的，顿时在内心涌出一股难以言表的憎恶感。此时，家将还无法判断对方行为的“善”与“恶”，但有人“在雨夜的罗生门上拔死人的头发，仅此足已是不可饶恕的恶”（14）。此时，如果有人再问其徘徊于楼下思考的难题：选择“饿死”还是去“做强盗”，他会毫不犹豫地选择“饿死”的内心转变，无疑是“作用于家将内心的、超越‘合理判断善恶’的直感，以越过法则的超伦理构造，感受到老太婆的行为是‘不可饶恕的恶’”（三好行雄 60）。但从小说文脉来看，家将的“憎恶感”还源于其武士身份“义”和“仁”的伦理观，即因对死者仁爱而产生怜悯之情，进而从内心涌出正义感。可见，此时的家将还未完成身份转换。想要获得根本性认知“变革”，就必须与外部世界进行对话。家将与老太婆之间的身体对决和言语对话，才是其实现认知“革新”的决定性契机。

家将快速登上楼梯出现在老太婆面前，老太婆在尸体堆里站起来几次企图逃走，却都被家将挡住去路。此时，家将才发现老太婆瘦得皮包骨头，他问道：“在干什么？快说！”（15）可老太婆却像哑巴似的沉默不语。他突然意识到对方的生死，完全掌控在自己手中，内心悠然升起一股难以言表的“满足感”。此时，“对于家将而言，老太婆是唯一的‘他者’，扮演着与他对立、并将其带入负时空的梅菲斯特式之角色”（三好行雄 60）。可见，家将和老太婆是“对立”的“他者”关系。从二者身体状况看，家将身体健壮，腰配刀剑；老太婆骨瘦如柴，手无缚鸡之力。家将从老太婆身上获得的“满足感”，显然就是“强者”征服“弱者”的满足感，与老太婆在“拔死人的头发”中所犯的强者欺辱弱者的“恶”相通。这种“恶”的实质是，作为个体完全被社会体制同化，不怀疑自己所为是不道德的，不加思考地扮演着将对方“他者化”的角色，践行着被社会体制所同化的“恶”。同时，从伦理身份而言，作为下等武士的家将，还未意识到自己的所为是被社会体制同化的“恶”，声称“我不是警察机关的差役”（16），只要你说出“为何拔死人的头发”（16）即可，实质上却正以“审判官”的身份，品尝着弱肉强食的“成就感”。

老太婆睁大像食肉鸟似的眼睛，盯着家将的脸，从喉咙里发出像乌鸦或青蛙的声音说：“拔这头发，是为了做假发”（16）。对此，家将不仅感到失望，甚至觉得受到侮辱。平冈敏夫（Toshio Hiraoka）认为，“使家将产生‘失望’甚至有种‘侮辱感’的原因，源于其期待”（42）。那么，家将内心到底“期待”着什么？生活在秩序内部的家将，突然闯入与动物乌鸦和猴子等属于同类的、生存于秩序外部的老太婆之场所，即使听了对方的解释，也会站在自

己的立场判断对方行为的“善恶”。¹老太婆的“生之场所”等同食物链上的乌鸦和猴子，与家将的生存境遇（如猫、壁虎、蜘蛛）形成对峙。家将企图在社会秩序的伦理内部找到其成为强盗的合理根据，而老太婆秉持的生存伦理却存在于社会秩序外部。从叙事者视角来看，老太婆拔死人的头发，就像猴子妈妈给小猴子抓虱子，是“善”的表现，可对家将而言这种行为却是“不可饶恕的‘恶’”（14）。这是二者在罗生门的混沌世界发生认知冲突的根本原因所在。其实，家将的认知意识与康德伦理学“无论何事，追求例外情形下‘自我’行为的合理化就是‘恶’”等同²，而老太婆的认知意识与黑格尔的“家族的立场、家族的情爱立场”相似³。前者属于康德伦理学的思考范畴，认为从“自我”的利益出发，希望他人能够特殊地对待自己，这种行为显然潜在着非理性的倾向，而在非理性之处就会产生“恶”。对此，黑格尔伦理学从家族、社会、国家和世界史等整体问题出发，提出在道德生活中存在两种法则：一是“人的法则”，诸如国家的法律和法令；二是“神的法则”，譬如站在家族的立场、家族情爱立场的行为。作者借用“梯子”这一媒介，让家将从“白昼”走向“黑夜”，其目的就在于：一、通过空间上的位移，使家将挣脱身份束缚，获得行动自由；二、使家将通过伦理认知“变革”开辟新的生存伦理。

三、旧伦理的终结与超伦理建构

面对家将的追问，老太婆无奈地回答：拔死人的头发也许是恶，但这里的死人在活着时都干过诸如此类的事，且谁也不认为那是恶。现在被“我”拔头发的死者，在活着时曾把蛇切成一段一段晒干，当作鱼去卖，但“我”不认为这是恶，因为不这样做就会被“饿死，没办法”（18）。不难发现，老太婆秉持的是“没办法”的生存伦理，与家将直面的伦理困境：要么“饿死”，要么“做强盗”暗合。于是，家将一边冷漠地听着老太婆的话，一边在内心萌生某种“勇气”，且敢肯定这种“勇气”就是自己在罗生门下所缺乏的那种“勇气”，并与刚才在楼上征服老太婆时涌起的那股“勇气”，是完全反方向的冲动。三好行雄认为，“老太婆的伦理认知，并不能教给家将任何东西，因为同样的伦理，在家将的认知内部早已孕育而生。他需要的是如何获得新的认知，才能饶恕‘不可饶恕的恶’，因此，家将与老太婆的相遇，是认知与认知的邂逅”（63）。然而，老太婆的伦理认知果真不能“教给家将任何东西”吗？事实代明，听完老太婆的回答后，家将获得了“勇气”，且做出了行动。

作为主体的家将对“他者”老太婆的伦理认知，产生共振乃至共鸣。老太婆教给家将的生存伦理是：要想活下去，就得终结至今束缚自己的旧伦理，从认知观念上超越既有的善恶之分、仁义道德，在既有秩序的外部建构超越世俗

1 参见田中实：「『羅生門』の＜読み＞の革命——＜近代小説＞の真髓を求めて」，《日本文学》，東京：日本教育協会，2018年，第5頁。

2 参见金子武藏：『ヘーゲルの精神現象学』，東京：筑摩書房，2012年，第27頁。

3 参见金子武藏：『ヘーゲルの精神現象学』，東京：筑摩書房，2012年，第30-31頁。

伦理的认知理念，即超伦理。正是在这种伦理“变革”的启示下，家将顺势揪住老太婆的衣领说道：“那么，我扒掉你的衣服，你也不会憎恨吧？因为我也是没有办法，不然就会饿死”（19-20）。说完便快速扒下老太婆的衣服，将其夹在腋下，通过陡峭的楼梯，瞬间消失在黑洞洞的夜幕，谁也不知其去向。对此，关口安义（Yasuyoshi Sekiguchi）指出，家将的行为是对老太婆的“惩罚”，其教诲功能是“劝善惩恶”（56），而田中实（Minoru Tanaka）认为，“家将成为强盗，只不过是其根据‘自己化’的世界认知，安逸地抢走老太婆的衣服，但此行为并不能获得自救”（7）。换言之，家将与老太婆的相遇，并未实现真正意义上的、主体与“他者”的相遇。

实际上，家将毅然地“扒掉老太婆衣服”的“勇气”，具有双重含义：一是表现为“恶”，此处的“恶”是从秩序外部破坏和颠覆旧秩序的能源所在；二是让老太婆认识到什么是“耻辱”，因为只有“知耻”才能“向善”。二者合力，才能终结陈腐而世俗的旧伦理。家将获得的另一种“勇气”，也就是与“憎恶和侮辱感”相反的“勇气”，则是家将超越“强盗”之路，在秩序外建构超伦理的可能性。对此，三好行雄指出，“家将可能和老太婆一样，以‘为了活命，没办法’为理由，与对方黯然地达成互相宽恕的状态。小说结尾‘谁也不知家将的去向’，真正把家将放逐到了‘无明’的彼岸”（71），而田中实认为，“家将不只限于成为强盗，因为他仍然停留于感伤而消极的年轻人之思维，故不会成为其它任何确定的人物。即家将要想成为强盗或其它人物，则需要与旧的伦理认知进行对决，与‘他者’展开对决，真正与外部相遇，这才是作者旨在叙述的领域。即作者经过再三修稿，最终抵达‘谁也不知家将的去向’，表明其陷入认知的‘无明暗夜’”（7）。但从小说结尾的两次改稿不难发现，在初稿（1915）和二稿（1917）中，作者明确让家将做“强盗”，直到终稿（1918）才将结尾改为：“谁也不知家将的去向”（20）。其意图就是让《罗生门》从家将成为“强盗”的故事，转变为家将终结旧伦理、在秩序外部建构超伦理的故事。从初稿到终稿期间，芥川内心究竟发生了什么变化？作为《罗生门》的变奏曲，作者还发表了《偷盗》（『偷盗』，1917），在“黑洞洞的夜幕”（20）世界之延长线上，进一步探讨丑恶的现实。芥川在《罗生门》的结尾处写道：“爬在楼梯口的、头发倒立的老太婆，朝着黑洞洞的夜幕望去，但其背后的火光仍然在燃烧”（20）。即使是老太婆这样突破人类伦理底线的存在，仍有获得自救的希望，但此处蕴含的微茫“希望”不再是弱肉强食的伦理观，而是克服“利己主义”、开辟超越“自我”的世界观。

芥川在《罗生门》中建构的伦理观，不仅具现了作者人生观一隅中隐秘于灵魂世界的“伦理”问题，而且展现了其伦理认知的变革轨迹，即从康德伦理学转向黑格尔伦理学。叙事者首先叙述了家将因受到双重的伦理法则——秩序内“白昼”世界的伦理法则和作为下等武士的伦理身份——的束缚，直

面要么“饿死”，要么去“做强盗”的伦理困境，且明知其未来的命运只能选择后者，却又找不到合乎其道德规范和身份的伦理依据，由此陷入没有“勇气”做出选择的生存困境。对此，作者让家将通过“梯子”，从日常世界的楼下登上混沌世界的楼上。同时，为了暗示家将通过空间上的位移，将会挣脱既有的伦理身份武士道精神的束缚，从感伤于蟋蟀的未来命运“无”或“死亡”，转向主体“自我”能够能动地主宰自己的命运，叙事者有意图地将叙事视角，从处于食物链低端的蟋蟀，投向身处食物链顶端的猫、壁虎和蜘蛛等，由此象征家将的认知世界将会发生质的“变革”。也就是说，作者在《罗生门》初稿和第二稿的结尾，让家将去“做强盗”时的认知意识，仍停留于康德伦理学，但前后经过三年沉淀后，作者让家将消失于“黑洞洞的夜幕，谁也不知其去向”，由此转向“黑夜”的秩序外世界，使家将的认知世界发生质的飞跃：从只考虑个人的或“自我”的利益，强调例外情形下“自我”言行的合理化，转向从整体出发，兼顾“人的法则”和“神的法则”的黑格尔伦理学，从而获得新生。即家将在混沌世界的罗生门上，终结了伪善的、“自我”行为正当化的旧伦理，开辟了在现实世界的秩序外部建构的伦理认知的新视野，实现了真正意义上的人生变革。与此同时，老太婆在被“扒掉衣服”之后，也获得了对固有认知痛定思痛的反思契机。作者投影在老太婆背后燃烧的“火光”，暗示着在她内心燃起的走向“新生”的希望。《罗生门》采用明暗两条伦理线交叉的叙事手法，刻画了主体“自我”追求“个体人生意义”的过程，由此树起了日本近代文学史上的一座丰碑。

Works Cited

- 芥川龍之介：『羅生門』。東京：新潮社，1972年。
- [Akutagawa, Ryunosuke. *Rashomon*. Tokyo: Shinchosha, 1972.]
- ：『芥川龍之介資料集 2』。甲府：山梨県立文学館，1993年。
- [—, *Ryunosuke Akutagawa Archives 2*. Kofu: Yamanashi Prefectural Museum of Literature, 1993.]
- 秋山虔、三好行雄編：『新日本文学史』。東京：文英堂，2016年。
- [Akiyama, Ken and Yukio Miyoshi, eds. *A New History of Japanese Literature*. Tokyo: Buneido, 2016.]
- 海老井英次：「『羅生門』——＜自我＞覚醒のドラマ」，『芥川龍之介『羅生門』作品論集』，志村有弘編。東京：クレス出版，2000年。
- [Ebii, Eiji. “‘Rashomon’: A Drama of Self-Awakening.” *Collected Essays on Ryunosuke Akutagawa’s “Rashōmon”*, edited by Arihiro Shimura. Tokyo: Crest Publishing, 2000.]
- 平岡敏夫：『芥川龍之介と現代』。東京：大修館書店，1995年。
- [Hiraoka, Toshio. *Ryunosuke Akutagawa and the Modern Era*. Tokyo: Taishukanshoten, 1995.]
- ：『芥川龍之介抒情の美学』。東京：大修館書店，1982年。
- [—, *The Aesthetics of Lyricism in Ryunosuke Akutagawa*. Tokyo: Taishukanshoten, 1982.]
- 駒尺喜美：『芥川龍之介の世界』。東京：法政大学出版局，1972年。

[Komashaku, Kimi. *The World of Ryunosuke Akutagawa*. Tokyo: Hosei UP, 1972.]

三好行雄：『芥川龍之介論』。東京：筑摩書房，1981年。

[Miyoshi, Yukio. *On Ryunosuke Akutagawa*. Tokyo: Chikumashobo, 1981.]

Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." *Forum for World Literature Studies* 3 (2021): 383-398.

聂珍钊：《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京：北京大学出版社，2014年。

[Nie Zhenzhao. *An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism*. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

関口安義：『「羅生門」を読む』。東京：三省堂，1993年。

[Sekiguchi, Yasuyoshi. *Reading "Rashomon"*. Tokyo: Sanseido, 1993.]

田中実：「『羅生門』の＜読み＞の革命——＜近代小説＞の真髄を求めて」、『日本文学』1 (2018)：6-7。

[Tanaka, Minoru. "The Revolution of Reading 'Rashōmon': Seeking the Essence of the Modern Novel." *Japanese Literature* 1 (2018): 6-7.]

新渡戸稲造：『武士道』。東京：岩波書店，1938年。

[Nitobe Inazo. *Bushido*. Tokyo: Iwanami Shoten, 1938.]

吉田精一：『芥川龍之介論』。東京：有精社，1971年。

[Yosida, Seiichi. *On Ryunosuke Akutagawa*. Tokyo: Yuseisha, 1971.]

Rethinking Ethical Identity in the Age of Artificial Intelligence

Ren Jie

Abstract: Ethical identity, as one of the core terms of Ethical Literary Criticism, is different from the personality identity in the traditional Western metaphysical philosophy, nor from the identity in the Western cultural studies. The age of AI is reshaping our understanding of ethical identity across various domains, including literature. The rise of AI in literary creation raises questions about the ethical identity of both authors and readers. These questions challenge the boundaries of authorship and creativity, prompting a reevaluation of what it means to be an author in the digital age. Similarly, with the popularization of AI-generated contents, readers may need to develop new skills to critically engage with texts, discerning between human and machine-generated narratives. This shift requires readers to adopt a more active role in interpreting and understanding literature, potentially reshaping their ethical identity as participants in the literary process. The writer would have to become a craftsman or a mixer, mediator or gatekeeper of the resulting artificial work. The traditional concept “reader” is shifted to co-producer or a “prosumer.” As AI technologies continue to evolve, they challenge traditional notions of identity, agency, and creativity, prompting us to rethink our ethical frameworks and responsibilities.

Keywords: ethical identity; Artificial Intelligence; ethical literary criticism

Author: Ren Jie, Ph.D., is Associate Researcher at the School of International Studies, Zhejiang University (Hangzhou 310058, China). Her research focuses on modern and contemporary Japanese Literature and Ethical Literary Criticism (Email: renjie_85@163.com).

标题: 人工智能时代伦理身份再思考

内容摘要: 伦理身份是文学伦理学批评的核心概念之一。它既不同于传统哲学中的人格身份，也不同于西方文化研究中的认同概念。人工智能时代的到来正在重塑我们对伦理身份的理解。人工智能在文学创作中的运用引发了对作者和读者伦理身份的追问，促使人们重新思考数字时代作者的意义。同样，随着人工智能生成内容的普及，读者可能需要培养新的技能来批判性地阅读文本，辨别人类和机器生成的叙事。这种转变要求读者在理解和解释文学时采

取更积极的态度去重塑他们作为文学过程参与者的伦理身份。作家应该成为作品的合作者、调解者和守门人。传统的“读者”应转变为“共同生产者”或“生产消费者”。人工智能技术的不断发展,挑战了传统身份、主体和创造等观念,促使我们重新思考我们的伦理规范和责任。

关键词: 伦理身份; 人工智能; 文学伦理学批评

作者简介: 任洁, 浙江大学外国语学院特聘副研究员, 主要研究领域为当代日本文学与文学伦理学批评。本文为国家社科基金重点招标项目“当代西方伦理批评文献的整理、翻译与研究”【项目批号: 19ZDA292】的阶段性成果。

Introduction

We live in an era of rapid technological advancement, where artificial intelligence (AI) is rapidly transforming nearly every aspect of our lives. From virtual personal assistants and self-driving cars to complex medical diagnostics and algorithmic decision-making, AI systems have become deeply embedded in our daily experiences. This rise of AI has profound implications for our individual and collective identity, challenging us to reexamine fundamental questions about what it means to be human in the 21st century.

At the heart of this challenge is the issue of ethical identity—how AI impacts our moral agency, values, and sense of self. As AI becomes more sophisticated and autonomous, it blurs the lines between human and machine, raising complex questions about moral responsibility, the nature of intelligence, and our place in the world. These questions cut to the core of who we are and how we define our ethical identity. This article will delve into the historical and contemporary perspectives on identity, exploring how philosophical, psychological, and technological developments have shaped our understanding of selfhood. It will examine the implications of AI on ethical identity, particularly in the realm of literary studies with Ethical Literary Criticism as an example, where the roles of authorship and readership are being redefined.

The Evolving Definition of Ethical Identity

The concept of identity has been a subject of intense philosophical and scholarly inquiry for centuries, with thinkers from diverse backgrounds grappling with the complexities of what it means to be a self, a person, or an individual. The origins of the term “identity” can be traced back to the Latin word “idem,” meaning “the same,” and the philosophical notion of “sameness” has been central to the evolving understanding of identity throughout history. One of the earliest and most influential

thinkers on the topic of identity was the ancient Greek philosopher Plato, who explored the idea of the “self” in his *Dialogues*. Plato’s conception of identity was heavily influenced by his metaphysical views, particularly his belief in the existence of a separate, eternal realm of forms or ideas.

Building on Plato’s ideas, the Roman philosopher Cicero introduced the term “identity” (*identitas* in Latin) in his writings, using it to refer to the essential, immutable characteristics that define an individual. As Cicero argued, identity is the quality that makes an entity definable and recognizable, in terms of possessing a set of attributes that distinguish it from others.¹ This emphasis on the consistent, defining features of the self would become a central theme in the subsequent development of identity theory. During the Middle Ages, the concept of identity was heavily influenced by the rise of Christianity and the Christian conception of the soul. Thinkers like Augustine of Hippo and Thomas Aquinas grappled with the idea of the self in relation to the divine, exploring the notion of a unified, eternal soul that transcended the physical body.

The Enlightenment era, with its emphasis on rationality and individualism, ushered in a new understanding of identity. Philosophers like René Descartes and John Locke shifted the focus to the individual’s capacity for self-reflection and conscious reasoning. Descartes’ famous declaration, “I think, therefore I am,” exemplified the centrality of the thinking, reasoning self in the Enlightenment conception of identity. According to Descartes argued, the self is defined by its ability to engage in conscious thought, to perceive and understand the world, and to assert its own existence.² Following these ideas, Locke’s notion of the “self” as a continuous, self-aware entity that persists through time and change became a seminal contribution to the understanding of identity. As Locke stated, “Personal identity consists not in the identity of substance, but in the identity of consciousness” (Locke 128). This emphasis on the unity of consciousness and the individual’s capacity for self-awareness would heavily influence later thinkers on the subject of identity.

The 19th and 20th centuries saw a proliferation of diverse perspectives on the nature of identity, as thinkers from various disciplines, including psychology, sociology, and philosophy, grappled with the complexities of the self. The existentialist philosophers, such as Jean-Paul Sartre and Simone de Beauvoir,

1 See Marcus Tullius Cicero, “On the Law,” *On the Commonwealth and On the Laws*, translated by James E. G. Zetzel, Cambridge: Cambridge UP, 1999, 105-175.

2 See René Descartes, *Meditations on First Philosophy*, translated by Donald A. Cress. Indianapolis: Hackett Publishing, 1993, 18-19.

challenged the notion of a fixed, essential identity, arguing that the self is a constantly evolving project that we actively construct through our choices and actions. As Sartre famously declared, “Existence precedes essence,” suggesting that the self is not a predetermined entity but rather a continuous process of becoming (Sartre 588).

Alongside these philosophical developments, the field of psychology also made significant contributions to the understanding of identity. Thinkers like Erik Erikson and George Herbert Mead emphasized the social and relational aspects of identity, highlighting how our sense of self is shaped by our interactions with others and the cultural contexts in which we live. As Mead argued, “the self arises is a social process which implies interaction of individuals in the group, implies the preexistence of the group” (Mead 164). The postmodern era, with its emphasis on the fragmentation and fluidity of identity, further challenged the notion of a unified, stable self. Thinkers like Michel Foucault and Judith Butler explored the ways in which identity is shaped by power structures, discourses, and performative practices. As Butler observed, “Identity is not a stable entity, but rather a shifting, contextual, and performative construct” (Butler 201).

The contemporary landscape of identity theory has been further shaped by the rise of digital technologies and the increasing prominence of digital identities. As we can see, the proliferation of online platforms and social media has given rise to new forms of identity expression, where individuals curate and present versions of themselves that may not fully align with their offline selves. This has led to a re-evaluation of the boundaries between the digital and the physical, and the ways in which technology is shaping and transforming our understanding of identity.

Throughout this rich history, the concept of identity has evolved from a focus on essential, immutable characteristics to a more fluid, contextual, and socially constructed understanding of the self. Whether it pertains to identity in the oldest metaphysics or modern philosophy, or identity within the realms of cultural studies and social psychology, two commonalities emerge. Firstly, these discussions revolve around an individual’s internal experience and subjective consciousness, ultimately addressing the question of “self-identity”—how one perceives oneself or acknowledges their existence. Secondly, these discussions remain rooted in the etymology of the term “identity” (same), focusing on the endurance and coherence of subjective self across time and space, irrespective of whether such consistency arises from within oneself or external societal factors.

Generally, the term “identity” in Chinese pertains to an individual’s social status. When extended into a legal context, identity denotes “the position of a

natural person within a specific social organizational system characterized by stable relationships,” exhibiting traits of “relative stability and interdependence” (Wei, Xu and Guo 835). From these two interpretations, “identity” does not prioritize the individual’s subjective experience; rather, it underscores its signifying function, clearly delineating an individual’s standing within a hierarchy or relational framework with others. It is mutually dependent on other identities and remains stable as long as the social order remains unchanged.

As one of the most influential literary theories around world, Ethical Literary Criticism also discusses the question of “who am I.” Though it does not reject the answers from perspectives of essentialism, rationality, memory, etc., it tends to focus on the subject of “I” first, because the premise of answering the question is that I am human. Only obtaining the identity of “human” can people further think about the problem of identification. As a necessary condition for proving the proposition “I am a man,” the first thing to answer is “what is a man.” In the long process of human civilization, human beings define “what is human” by distinguishing themselves from beasts first in physical form and then in essence, which indicates the ethical perspective of identity.

Ethical identity constitutes one of the fundamental concepts in the theory of Ethical Literary Criticism, wherein the term “identity” retains its foundational meaning from the Chinese lexicon. The essence of the concept of ethical identity lies not in introspectively questioning “who am I” or defining the “self,” but rather in ascertaining the position of the identity subject within society through ethical criteria. Given the complexity and diversity inherent in social life, individuals often find themselves engaged in multiple ethical relationships, thereby possessing various ethical identities—akin to the notion of “roles” found in social psychology’s identity theory. However, it is crucial to note that ethical identity does not emerge from conscious acts of “self-identification”; instead, it arises from ethical choices. Whether an individual aligns with their existing ethical identity or experiences a particular subjective perspective does not alter the fact that they possess a specific ethical identity, nor does it diminish the responsibilities and obligations incumbent upon them as subjects of that identity.

Human-AI Interaction and the Agency of Ethical Identity

The concept of ethical identity in the theory of Ethical Literary Criticism possesses objectivity; however, this objectivity does not adhere to essentialism and does not preclude the intimate connection between human subjective consciousness and emotional experience with ethical identity. Moreover, it acknowledges the

subjective initiative of human beings as subjects of identity to comprehend, apprehend, construct, and deconstruct ethical identity. Ethical identity is not solely a consequence of ethical choices but serves as both the prerequisite and foundation for such choices. The construction and deconstruction of ethical identity are actualized through ethical decision-making processes. When individuals make moral choices, their will inevitably becomes involved, giving rise to subjective emotional experiences.

From an origin perspective on ethical identity, humans become subjects of identification due to historical ethical selection; this signifies humanity's acquisition of moral consciousness and entry into civilized society from initial ethical chaos. Humans possess a Sphinx factor, a combination of human factor and animal factor combines, that distinguishes them from other species; their morality constitutes an essential attribute inherent to their nature. However, these moral attributes are neither a priori existence nor an unchanging essence but rather acquired through continuous moral decision-making within human society.

As AI technologies become more pervasive, the boundaries between human and machine are becoming increasingly blurred. One of the central ethical challenges posed by it is the potential erosion of human agency—our capacity as individuals to make meaningful choices and be the authors of our own lives. As AI systems become more advanced and ubiquitous, they are playing an ever-greater role in shaping the decisions and behaviors of humans. This blurring of boundaries has profound implications for our understanding of personal ethical identity, agency, and the very nature of what it means to be human.

The integration of AI-powered devices and interfaces into our daily lives has led to a deeper level of human-machine symbiosis. Intelligent personal assistants, for instance, become intimately entangled with our personal information, daily routines, and even our emotional well-being. This raises questions about the extent to which these technologies shape and influence our sense of self, and whether they can be considered extensions of our own identity. Furthermore, the development of advanced AI systems, such as chatbots and virtual companions, challenges our traditional notions of interpersonal relationships and social connections. As these AI entities become more lifelike and emotionally responsive, “the boundary between man and machine has been completely broken, and machines seem to be more like people, while people seem to be more like machines” (Yang 423). This raises complex ethical questions about the nature of empathy, trust, and the boundaries of authentic human relationships.

In the traditional understanding of ethics, moral agency is closely tied to

the ability to make conscious, rational choices and to be held accountable for the consequences of those choices. However, the advent of AI systems that can autonomously make decisions and take actions raises the question of whether they can be considered moral agents in their own right. If an AI system causes harm, how do we determine the appropriate locus of moral responsibility? Should the system's developers, the users, or the system itself be held accountable? These questions become particularly complex when AI systems are designed to operate in dynamic, unpredictable environments, where their decision-making may be influenced by factors beyond the control or foresight of their creators. This challenges the traditional notions of moral responsibility and the clear delineation between human and machine decision-making. As the influence of AI continues to grow, the need to develop robust ethical frameworks and governance structures becomes increasingly urgent. This task requires the collaboration of various stakeholders, including policymakers, ethicists, technologists, and the public at large. One crucial aspect of this endeavor is the establishment of ethical principles and guidelines that can serve as a foundation for the responsible development and deployment of AI systems. These principles should address issues such as transparency, accountability, fairness, privacy, and the preservation of human agency and dignity.

Additionally, the development of AI-specific ethical frameworks and decision-making algorithms is crucial. These frameworks should be designed to navigate the complex ethical dilemmas that arise in the context of AI-powered decision-making, drawing upon philosophical and moral theories to inform the development of autonomous systems that can reliably uphold ethical principles. Another important consideration is the role of human oversight and intervention in the deployment of AI systems. While AI may possess superior capabilities in certain domains, the maintenance of human agency and the ability to override or intervene in AI decision-making processes is essential to preserving ethical integrity and ensuring that these technologies remain aligned with human values and priorities.

It is worth noting that with the rapid development and widespread application of artificial intelligence technology, AI literature, as a new type of genre has inevitably triggered the discussion on the form and the content of literature, the author's role and the literary creation, the reading and the dissemination of the work, the literary theory and the criticism, etc., furthering the change of traditional literary concepts and the reconstruction of literary theory and criticism. For example, in the face of AI literature, people's first interest may be, "who is the author?" "How to define the reader?"

Redefining the Ethical Identity in the Context of Literary Studies

Almost all ethical dilemmas in human moral life are intricately linked to human identities, and the same holds true for ethical predicaments within the realm of literature. For instance, the ethical identity of characters often intertwines with the ethical boundaries, moral quandaries, and societal taboos depicted in literary works. The transformation of ethical identity can directly engender moral confusion and even necessitate a reconstruction of ethical order. Therefore, Ethical Literary Criticism focuses on analyzing the ethical identities of characters in literary works, encompassing an examination of how individuals regulate their own behavior and acquire or alter their identities through decision-making processes. In addition to character analysis, Ethical Literary Criticism also explores the relationship between authors and their creations as well as readers' engagement (criticism) from an ethically informed perspective.

Traditionally, the notion of authorial identity has been closely tied to the idea of the autonomous, rational individual—the creative genius whose unique voice and vision are expressed through the written word. Similarly, the role of the reader has often been conceptualized as a passive receptor of the author's intended meaning, tasked with deciphering and interpreting the text. However, in the ever-evolving landscape of literary theory and philosophy, these longstanding conceptions of authorial and readerly identity have been increasingly challenged and reconceived. The age of AI has ushered in significant transformations in the realm of literature, challenging traditional notions of authorship and readership identity. In response to a series of problems brought about by the rise of AI literature, especially those related to the identity of authors and readers in works, Ethical Literary Criticism provides a new way of thinking from the perspective of ethical identity with the help of the “three-stage theory of human civilization” which holds that the development of human society needs to go through a process from natural selection to ethical selection and finally to scientific selection. When human beings completely enter the stage of real scientific selection, they still need to go through a stage of “pre-scientific selection” dominated by ethical principles, which is also the stage that human beings are currently in.

One of the major differences between the stage of the pre-scientific selection and the one of traditional ethical selection is that artificial intelligence is more and more involved in the practical activities of social life. Therefore, humanists in the era of AI should not think about how to emphasize the boundary between traditional literature and AI literature, nor should they analyze AI literature only

relying on traditional literary concepts or literary theories. Ethical Literary Criticism emphasizes analyzing literature “from the viewpoint of historical development, interpreting the literature of different periods from an ethical perspective, so as to overcome the radical gap of literary interpretation in different ethical conditions and contexts” (Nie 191). Therefore, the primary task of literary research in the age of AI is to construct a theoretical system suitable for literary criticism with the age’s characteristics, the first step of which is to rethink the identity of authors and readers in literary studies.

One of the key philosophers who has influenced the reconceptualization of authorial identity is Michel Foucault. Building on his earlier work on the “death of the author,” Foucault’s insights have taken on new significance in the face of AI-powered writing assistants and generative language models. He posits, “the function of an author is to characterize the existence, circulation, and operation of certain discourses within a society” (Foucault 124). This means the author is not the source of the text’s meaning, but rather a function within the text—a position that is constructed and negotiated through various social and discursive forces. In the age of AI, these “social and discursive forces” now include the algorithms, data, and programming that shape the creative output of AI-assisted authors.

The advent of AI-powered writing assistants and content generation tools has undoubtedly transformed the creative process for many authors. These technologies can assist in tasks such as ideation, research, structuring, and even drafting text, potentially enhancing the author’s productivity, creativity, and output. However, the increasing sophistication and autonomy of these AI systems raises profound ethical questions about the nature of authorship and the attribution of creative work. When an author utilizes AI tools to generate or refine substantial portions of a text, to what extent can the resulting work be considered a solely human-authored creation? And how should the ethical and legal considerations of ownership, attribution, and responsibility be navigated?

Moreover, the potential for AI systems to autonomously produce original written works, without any direct human involvement, further complicates the ethical landscape. If an AI system is capable of generating a coherent, compelling, and substantive piece of writing, can it be considered the “author” in any meaningful sense? And if so, what are the implications for the moral and legal rights and responsibilities associated with that authorship? These questions become especially thorny when considering the use of AI in the creation of content that carries significant societal impact, such as news articles, political commentary, or educational materials. If an AI system is responsible for the generation or curation

of such content, how can we ensure that the ethical principles and values underlying its decision-making are transparent, accountable, and aligned with the public good?

Thus, in the literary field the trend is to talk of the “(artificial) writer” rather than the author. Therefore, the writer would have to become a “craftsman” or a “mixer,” “mediator” or “gatekeeper” of the resulting artificial work (Gallego Cuiñas 30). This means in the process of reading, we should keep watchful on this mode of digital (re-)production, because it would like to result in the loss of bibliodiversity, and in the dangerous increase in colonial and gender biases. In other words, digital (re-)production, particularly through artificial intelligence and machine learning models, often relies on large but homogenized datasets. These datasets tend to reflect existing publishing trends, which are already influenced by market forces and dominant cultural narratives. Similarly, gender biases manifest in the reinforcement of stereotypes and the underrepresentation or misrepresentation of genders outside the traditionally dominant male perspective. As AI models generate new content, these biases can be unintentionally perpetuated and even amplified.

Just as the role of the author is being reshaped by the advent of AI, the experience and ethical identity of the reader is also undergoing a profound transformation. As Barthes argues, “the birth of the reader must be at the cost of the death of the author” (Barthes 148). This shift in the conception of authorial and readerly identity has profound implications for the way we approach literary texts and the ethical obligations that arise from the act of reading. The increasing prevalence of AI-powered content recommendation and personalization algorithms has fundamentally altered the ways in which readers discover, engage with, and make sense of written information. On one hand, these AI-driven systems can provide valuable assistance to readers, curating and surfacing content that is tailored to their individual interests, preferences, and cognitive needs. This can help readers navigate the vast sea of available information, discover new and relevant sources, and deepen their understanding and engagement with topics they care about.

However, the opacity and inherent biases of these algorithmic systems raise significant ethical concerns. As readers become increasingly reliant on AI-powered recommendations, they may find themselves exposed to a narrower and more insular range of perspectives, inadvertently reinforcing their existing beliefs and biases rather than challenging them. This can lead to the formation of echo chambers, the marginalization of minority or dissenting voices, and the erosion of the readers’ capacity for critical, independent thinking. Moreover, the commercial incentives and profit-driven objectives that often underlie these recommendation algorithms can subtly manipulate readers’ attention and behaviors in ways that may not align

with their intellectual, emotional, or moral interests. For example, an AI system may prioritize content that is designed to maximize engagement and time spent on a platform, rather than content that promotes deeper understanding, nuanced discourse, or ethical reflection.

In this context, the ethical identity of the reader is transformed from that of an autonomous, intellectually curious, and discerning individual to one that is increasingly reliant on, and potentially manipulated by, the invisible hand of AI. The traditional concept “reader” is shifted to (digital) “prosumer.” The reader of digital literature is always a co-producer or a “prosumer” (Villanueva 5), because the interaction with the work is a consubstantial part of the reading process. This means that the reader is also the (co)author with his or her participating in the output of the text. By refining prompts and engaging with the generated material, readers shape the final product, making their involvement more collaborative and interactive than in traditional reading experiences. Consequently, the boundaries between author and reader become increasingly blurred, emphasizing the collaborative nature of digital literature in the age of AI.

Furthermore, the rise of AI-powered personalization and recommendation systems in the digital reading landscape has introduced new ethical considerations for the reader. As these systems curate and deliver content tailored to individual preferences and behaviors, the reader must grapple with the potential for manipulation, the erosion of serendipity, and the reinforcement of echo chambers. In response to these challenges, the redefinition of the ethical identity of both the author and the reader in the age of AI must be grounded in the establishment of robust ethical frameworks and governance structures. These frameworks should address issues such as transparency, accountability, fairness, privacy, and the preservation of human agency and creativity. Ultimately, the ethical identity of the reader in the age of AI must be one that is empowered, discerning, and resistant to manipulation—one that can navigate the informational landscape with a keen awareness of the ethical implications of algorithmic curation and the importance of maintaining a diversity of perspectives and a commitment to truth.

Conclusion

As the roles of author and reader are reshaped by the rapid advancement of AI, the challenge before us is to redefine the ethical identity of these crucial participants in the creative and knowledge-sharing ecosystem. This will require a multifaceted effort that addresses the technical, philosophical, and societal dimensions of the issue. On the technical front, the development of AI systems that are more

transparent, accountable, and aligned with human values will be crucial. AI-powered writing assistants and content generation tools must be designed in a way that preserves the integrity and autonomy of the human author, with clear delineation of responsibilities and attribution. Similarly, recommendation algorithms must prioritize the intellectual and moral interests of the reader, rather than the commercial objectives of platform owners.

At the philosophical level, we must engage in deeper exploration and debate around the nature of creativity, authorship, and the moral status of AI systems. As these technologies become more advanced, we may need to reconsider and potentially redefine our understanding of what it means to be an “author” or a “reader” in the 21st century. This will involve grappling with complex questions about the nature of intelligence, consciousness, and moral responsibility. Ultimately, the preservation and renewal of the ethical identity of authors and readers in the age of AI will require a concerted effort on the part of diverse stakeholders—including technologists, ethicists, policymakers, educators, and the general public. By collaboratively establishing clear ethical guidelines, promoting media literacy and critical thinking, and shaping the development and deployment of AI systems in service of the public good, we can ensure that the remarkable advancements of these technologies empower, rather than undermine, the core values and principles that define our humanity. In doing so, we can forge a future in which authors and readers alike are empowered to engage in the creative and knowledge-sharing processes with a renewed sense of ethical identity – one that celebrates the unique capacities of the human mind, upholds the principles of intellectual integrity and social responsibility, and harnesses the transformative potential of AI in service of a more just, equitable, and enlightened world.

Works Cited

- Barthes, Roland. “The Death of the Author.” *Image-Music-Text*, translated by Stephen Heath. New York: Hill and Wang, 1977. 142-148.
- Butler, Judith. *Gender Trouble: Feminism and the Subversion of Identity*. London: Routledge, 1990.
- Cicero, Marcus Tullius. *On the Commonwealth and On the Laws*, translated by James E. G. Zetzel. Cambridge: Cambridge UP, 1999.
- Descartes, René. *Meditations on First Philosophy*, translated by Donald A. Cress. Indianapolis: Hackett Publishing, 1993.
- Foucault, Michel. “What Is an Author?” *Language, Counter-Memory, Practice: Selected Essays and Interviews*, edited by Donald F. Bouchard. Ithaca: Cornell UP, 1977. 113-138.
- Gallego Cuiñas, Ana. “Literature Seen Through Big Data and Artificial Intelligence: Key Concepts

- and Critical Challenges.” *Humanities and Big Data in Ibero-America: Theory, Methodology and Practical Applications*, edited by Ana Gallego Cuiñas and Daniel Torres-Salinas. De Gruyter, 2024. 25-42. Available at: <https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110753523-003> Accessed 1 Jun. 2024.
- Locke, John. *An Essay Concerning Human Understanding*, edited by Peter H. Nidditch. Oxford: Oxford UP, 1975.
- Mead, George Herbert. *Mind, Self, and Society*, edited by Charles W. Morris. Chicago and London: U of Chicago P, 1972.
- Nie Zhenzhao. “Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory.” *Forum for World Literature Studies* 2 (2021): 189-207.
- Sartre, Jean-Paul. *Being and Nothingness*, translated by Hazel E. Barnes. London and New York: Routledge, 2003.
- Wei Zhenying, Xu Xuelu and Guo Mingrui, eds. *Peking University Law Encyclopedia: Civil Law and Business Law*. Beijing: Peking UP, 2004.
- Yang Gexin. “From Ethical Selection to Scientific Selection: The Theoretical Logic of Ethical Literary Criticism.” *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 3 (2022): 416-425.

AI Turn in Ethical Literary Criticism

Lyu Hongbo & Fang Wenkai

Abstract: Artificial intelligence (AI) tools, leveraging advanced language models, acquire and emulate human literary creation. These tools exhibit the ability to rapidly generate a substantial volume of diverse multimodal literary works, cater to individualized reader preferences, and engage in interactive exchanges with readers, thereby fostering a paradigm of collaborative creation between humans and AI. In the era of AI, the roles of authors, literary works, readers, and critics will undergo significant transformations. AI literature poses challenges to existing literary theories that define traditional concepts in literature, thereby necessitating the reconstruction and advancement of literary criticism. Ethical literary criticism (ELC) with its interdisciplinary attributes, is dedicated to using scientific theoretical methods to study the mechanisms of literary creation and its ethical implications. Building on its original theoretical framework, ELC actively addresses the issues and needs arising from AI literature research. Nie Zhenzhao's definitions of language and text facilitate the study of future literary types and their significance. The narrative, aesthetics, and educational aspects of AI literature will also become focal points and domains for further innovation and development in ELC. The scientific selection phase represents the AI era, and with the AI turn, ELC has undergone significant transformations.

Keywords: AI turn; ethical literary criticism; scientific selection; AI literature

Authors: **Lyu Hongbo** is Lecturer at School of Foreign Studies, Jiangnan University (Wuxi 214122, China). Her current research interests are children's picture books and ethical literary criticism (Email: lyuhongbo@qq.com). **Fang Wenkai** (Corresponding Author) is Professor at School of Foreign Studies, Jiangnan University (Wuxi 214122, China). His academic interests are ethical literary criticism and American Cli-fi criticism (Email: fangwenkai@jiangnan.edu.cn).

标题: 文学伦理学批评的人工智能转向

内容摘要: 人工智能工具通过大语言模型学习并模仿人类进行文学创作,不仅能够快速生成大量多模态、多样式的文学作品,还能满足读者的个性化需求并与读者产生互动,开启人机协作的创作模式。人工智能时代的作者、作品、读者、批评者都将产生重要转变。人工智能文学突破了现有文学理论对

传统文学概念的界定，亟需文学批评的重构与发展。具有跨学科属性的文学伦理学批评致力于用科学的理论方法研究文学的生成机制和伦理内涵，在原有的理论架构和基础上积极关注人工智能文学研究的问题与需求。聂珍钊对语言和文本的定义有助于研究未来文学的类型和意义，而且人工智能文学的叙事、审美、教育都将成为文学伦理学批评进一步创新发展的支点和场域。科学选择阶段就是人工智能时代，文学伦理学批评随着人工智能转向迎来了重大变革。

关键词：人工智能转向；文学伦理学批评；科学选择；人工智能文学

作者简介：吕洪波，江南大学外国语学院讲师，主要从事儿童图画书和文学伦理学批评研究；方文开，江南大学外国语学院教授，主要研究兴趣为文学伦理学批评及美国气候小说批评。本文为江苏省教育厅 2021 年度高校哲学社会科学研究一般项目“20 世纪美国儿童图画书的符号认知与伦理价值研究”【项目批号：2021SJA0874】以及中央高校基本科研业务费专项资金资助【项目批号：JUSRP121100】阶段性成果。

Introduction

After twenty years of development, ethical literary criticism (ELC) has welcomed a new turn, namely the Artificial Intelligence (AI) turn. This concept was formally introduced by Nie Zhenzhao, the father of ELC,¹ at the high-end Forum on Future Literature and ELC held at the School of Foreign Languages, Jiangnan University, on April 12, 2024. This marks a new stage in the development of ELC. The AI turn in ELC not only reflects the impact of technological advancement on literary research but also demonstrates the theoretical development trends of ELC in the context of the new era.

The AI turn in ELC highlights the necessity for ELC to innovate on its inherent interdisciplinary nature when addressing AI literature. This turn aims to explore ethical themes and moral judgments in the literature of the scientific selection² stage, providing new perspectives and tools for literary research, and leading the discussion of frontier issues. Specifically, the AI turn involves ethical examination of AI-generated content, analysis of the AI creation process, and innovation in the methods of critiquing AI literary works. Nie Zhenzhao points out that the advent of the AI era not only changes the way literature is created but also redefines the identities of authors and the needs of readers. AI literature is not only a new literary

1 See Chen Lizhen, “Rejuvenation and Innovation: The Past, Present and Future of Ethical Literary Criticism,” *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 3 (2019): 389.

2 See Nie Zhenzhao, *Introduction to Ethical Literature Criticism*, Beijing: Peking UP, 2014, 251.

form but also an interdisciplinary research field that integrates literature, ethics, computer science, and other disciplines, providing ELC with rich research materials and broad development space.

I. Necessity of AI Turn

The rapid development of artificial intelligence (AI) technology has had a profound impact on various fields, including literary creation and criticism. AI creation tools are already capable of generating high-quality texts across various genres, from poetry to novels. These tools use deep learning techniques to train on vast amounts of textual data, simulating human writing styles to produce coherent and logical literary works. This technological breakthrough not only enhances creative efficiency but also transforms traditional literary creation processes. Additionally, AI can generate personalized literary content based on readers' interests and preferences, catering to diverse reader needs. As AI technology advances, literary creation is no longer confined to textual expression. AI can integrate images, audio, video, and other media to create multimodal works. The rise of AI creation has sparked discussions about author identity and creation ethics by scholars like Nie Zhenzhao and Yang Gexin. Traditional literary criticism centers on human authors, examining how their personal experiences and thoughts influence their works. However, AI-generated works lack individual experiences, prompting critics to rethink the concept of the creative subject. Assessing the literary value and ethical implications of AI creation has become a crucial task for ELC. AI creation brings numerous ethical and legal issues, such as copyright ownership, originality, and moral responsibility. ELC plays a vital role in this regard, offering theoretical support for policy-making and legal frameworks. Critics need to continually update and refine theoretical systems to adapt to new technological trends.

AI creation tools, such as Artificial Intelligence Generated Content (AIGC), can replace humans in completing literary creation. This not only alters the traditional role of authors but also triggers extensive ethical discussions about the identity of authors. In traditional literary creation, the author is the sole creator of the work. However, the emergence of AI creation tools disrupts this traditional concept, making the notion of "author" more complex and diverse. These tools can create based on preset themes and styles and can respond in real-time to user inputs, engaging in interactive creation. This capability transforms AI from a mere auxiliary tool into an independent creative entity. AI-generated works can match human authors in language expression, plot construction, and character development, and even surpass human creation in some aspects. For instance, AI can generate a

large volume of creative content in a short time, meeting market demand for new works, and can also adjust and optimize based on reader feedback. The widespread application of AI creation tools poses significant challenges to the traditional role of authors. In traditional literary creation, authors are not only the creators of works but also the soul of the works. Their personal experiences, emotional experiences, and viewpoints profoundly impact the content and form of the works, giving each work a unique personality and style. However, the advent of AI creation tools diminishes this uniqueness. AI-generated works raise disputes about originality and copyright ownership. Traditionally, copyright belongs to the creator, an individual or organization with independent creative intent and ability. However, as a tool, should AI-generated works receive the same copyright protection? Furthermore, human authors convey cultural values and social identities through their works, while AI creation tools, might produce works that lack cultural depth and social resonance. Whether AI-generated works can truly represent a particular culture or group is a question worth considering.

AI literature represents a new form of future literature, necessitating new critical theories for its interpretation and analysis. This new form is characterized by innovations in content and form, as well as significant transformations in the mechanisms of creation and modes of dissemination. AI literature introduces dynamic and adaptive narratives that can evolve based on reader interaction and feedback. This level of interactivity not only enhances reader engagement but also requires a new critical approach to analyze the fluid nature of these narratives. AI literature often employs multimodal and transmedia storytelling techniques, combining text with images, audio, video, and other media forms. This convergence of multiple media formats creates a richer and more immersive reading experience. Critically analyzing such works necessitates an understanding of how different media elements interact and contribute to the overall narrative and thematic expression. AI literature is often distributed through digital platforms that leverage AI for content recommendation and personalization. These platforms can analyze user data to suggest tailored reading experiences, thus transforming how literature is consumed. AI technology enables the rapid translation and adaptation of literary works, fostering greater cultural exchange and global reach. AI-generated literature can be instantly translated into multiple languages, broadening its accessibility and impact. Critical analysis should consider the implications of AI-facilitated translation on cultural specificity, literary nuance, and cross-cultural communication. New critical frameworks must be established to evaluate the aesthetic, ethical, and technical aspects of AI literature. While new theories are

essential, adapting traditional literary theories to address the nuances of AI literature is equally important. Concepts such as ethical identity, ethical choice, and ethical environment can be reinterpreted to accommodate the innovations introduced by AI. This adaptation ensures continuity and coherence in literary criticism. In conclusion, AI literature represents a transformative new form of future literature, necessitating the development of new critical theories and the adaptation of existing ones. By addressing the innovations in content, the transformations in creation mechanisms, the changes in dissemination methods, and the ethical considerations, ELC can effectively navigate the evolving landscape of AI literature. This approach ensures that literary criticism remains relevant and robust in the face of technological advancements, fostering a deeper understanding of the interplay between literature and AI.

II. Feasibility of AI Turn

Since 2004, ELC has undergone twenty years of development, continuously keeping pace with the times, innovating and refining itself. In recent years, numerous conferences centered on technology themes have been held, reflecting a strong awareness of contemporary issues and a spirit of innovation. At the 9th Convention of the International Association for Ethical Literary Criticism held in Hangzhou in 2019, it was clearly stated that AI represents the future direction of literary development and is also a turn in ELC. The theme of the conference explicitly highlighted AI literature and pointed out that the focus on AI will remain a central topic for a considerable time. ELC is at the forefront of literary research, whether in foreign or Chinese literature, and has clearly identified AI as a key direction from the association's perspective. At the opening ceremony, Nie Zhenzhao emphasized that gene technology, artificial intelligence, and fifth-generation mobile communication technology (5G) are the driving forces propelling us into the stage of scientific selection. At the 10th Convention in Beijing in 2020, he reiterated that research on cognitive neuroscience, artificial intelligence, microchips, and information technologies will result in rapid transformations in literary research, paving new paths for scientific research in the humanities. At the 11th Convention in Guangzhou in 2022, he stressed once again that the integration of AI literature and AI as literature is a characteristic of scientific reality and an ethical choice we must make. This represents the ethical-scientific-turn we will undergo. At the 12th Convention in Wuhan in 2023, he again discussed AI and literature in his speech at the opening ceremony. In the field of ELC, future development lies in the alliance between digitalization and artificial intelligence research. Future Humanities Lab

has been established at Guangdong University of Foreign Studies. This lab aims to integrate the humanities within scientific technology, develop application tools for intelligent humanities research, explore interdisciplinary development between AI learning and humanities disciplines, and seek scientific methods and approaches for reconstructing literary theory. While continuously absorbing and learning from the latest technological advancements, ELC also consistently reflects upon and adjusts its theoretical framework to meet the needs of contemporary literary research. Through integration with technology, ELC has demonstrated its strong vitality and adaptability, laying a solid foundation for future development.

ELC emphasizes the objectivity, scientific nature, and timeliness of its theory, applying it broadly across Eastern and Western literature, traditional and modern literature, and various genres such as poetry, drama, and novels. By integrating scientific research methods, ELC can more accurately and deeply analyze ethical issues in literary works, uncovering the moral significance behind them. At the same time, the scientific and objective nature of the theory allows ELC to better adapt to the characteristics and needs of AI literature, providing theoretical support for its development. To solve problems and meet needs, ELC has constructed a systematic theory. This theory is proposed based on specific national conditions and practical circumstances, aiming to address issues arising in society. Its necessity and urgency lie in the fundamental function of literature to reflect and explore ethical and moral issues. This theory focuses on the development of literature itself and, based on foundational works like the *Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism* (2014) and *A Study on the Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism* (2020), has established a unique set of critical terminology and discourse system, becoming a useful tool for literary criticism. These theoretical tools enable researchers to better understand and analyze ethical issues in literary works. The “scientific selection” in the three-stage civilization theory is forward-looking, showing a vision of development. It is essential to view human ethical issues and ELC with a historical and developmental perspective.¹ Each era has its specific ethics; what is regarded as true ethics in one era may be considered erroneous in another. Therefore, ethical issues should not be approached with a rigid attitude but must evolve with changing times. ELC can not only address ethical issues in reality but also adapt to emerging AI literature, providing robust theoretical support.

ELC’s integration with science and technology, including fields such as the

1 See Nie Zhenzhao, “Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory,” *Forum for World Literature Studies* 2 (2021): 189.

human brain, language, consciousness,¹ and texts, exemplifies its interdisciplinary and integrative nature. The study of AI literature necessitates the application of knowledge from multiple disciplines, including computer science, cognitive science, linguistics, and more. In this regard, ELC holds a unique advantage. Integrating insights from brain text and cognitive science allows ELC to delve into the neurological and cognitive processes involved in reading and creating literature. By understanding how the brain processes narrative structures, metaphors, and ethical dilemmas presented in texts, researchers can develop more nuanced interpretations of literary works. This interdisciplinary approach helps in exploring how AI-generated texts are perceived by human readers and the cognitive impact they may have. Language is at the core of both literature and AI-generated content. Understanding the nuances of language helps in assessing the stylistic and rhetorical strategies employed in AI-generated literature. Yang Gexin believes that Nie Zhenzhao's redefinition of language² precisely confirms that both language and AI share the same instantaneity in their generation processes. Meanwhile, the study of consciousness and philosophical inquiries into the nature of creativity and authorship are crucial in ELC of AI literature. Philosophical perspectives can help address questions about the nature of AI consciousness (if any), the ethical implications of machine creativity, and the redefinition of authorship in the age of AI. This interdisciplinary dialogue enriches the theoretical underpinnings of literary criticism and provides a deeper understanding of the ethical dimensions involved. Interdisciplinary collaboration enables ELC to provide multidimensional support for AI literary studies. By embracing collaboration across fields such as cognitive science, linguistics, computer science, and philosophy, ELC can expand its research horizons and propose comprehensive theoretical frameworks.

While maintaining its distinctive Chinese characteristics, ELC has also achieved broad international influence, demonstrating its vibrant developmental prospects. By integrating traditional Chinese cultural elements with modern scientific and technological advancements, ELC has constructed a uniquely Chinese theoretical framework. This framework not only addresses practical issues in domestic literary research but also exerts a positive impact on the international literary research community. This integration allows for a nuanced critique that respects traditional values while embracing modern analytical techniques,

1 See Nie Zhenzhao, "On Human Cognition and Consciousness," *Zhejiang Social Sciences* 10 (2020): 94.

2 See Nie Zhenzhao, "On Language and Text," *Journal of Hangzhou Normal University (Humanities and Social Sciences)* 5 (2023): 47.

making the theory both culturally grounded and forward-looking. ELC has gained significant traction internationally, with scholars from various countries adopting and adapting its principles. Its methodological rigor and ethical focus resonate with global academic audiences, leading to its inclusion in international conferences, journals, and scholarly discussions. This widespread acceptance underscores the theory's versatility and relevance across different cultural and academic settings. Through active participation in international academic exchanges and collaborative projects, ELC continuously absorbs and incorporates the latest research findings. These interactions foster mutual understanding and knowledge sharing, enhancing the theoretical robustness and applicability of ELC. International conferences and workshops serve as platforms for Chinese scholars to present their research, engage with global peers, and refine their theoretical approaches based on diverse feedback. The principles of ELC have been influential in shaping global literary studies, particularly in areas concerning ethics and literature. By providing a framework that emphasizes moral considerations in literary analysis, it has inspired scholars worldwide to revisit and re-evaluate the ethical dimensions of literary works. This influence is evident in the increasing number of international publications that incorporate ELC. ELC remains dynamic, continually adapting to new literary forms and technological advancements. By incorporating the latest developments in AI, digital humanities, and interdisciplinary studies, it stays relevant and responsive to the evolving landscape of literary research. This adaptability ensures that ELC can address contemporary issues effectively while maintaining its core ethical focus. The ongoing exchange with international scholars and the integration of cutting-edge research foster continuous theoretical innovation within ELC. This process leads to the development of new analytical tools, methodologies, and theoretical perspectives that enhance its analytical precision and depth. As a result, ELC evolves into a more comprehensive and sophisticated critical framework.

III. Development Trends of the AI Turn

Nie Zhenzhao's definition of future literature involves the concept of multimodality, which indicates that new concepts and terms will continually emerge. Multimodal literature integrates text with visual and auditory elements, creating a richer and more immersive storytelling experience. For example, a multimodal novel might combine written chapters with illustrations, audio recordings of character dialogues, and video segments that enhance the narrative. This fusion of different media forms allows for a more dynamic and engaging way to tell stories, capturing the reader's attention through multiple sensory channels. The incorporation of various

media forms gives rise to new genres and subgenres within literature. These might include interactive digital novels, graphic novels with integrated soundtracks, or virtual reality experiences that allow readers to explore narrative worlds in three dimensions. Each of these new genres presents unique opportunities for creative expression and expands the boundaries of what literature can be. By engaging multiple senses, multimodal literature can create deeper emotional and cognitive connections with readers. For instance, the combination of text and music can evoke specific moods and atmospheres, while visual elements can provide context and clarity to complex narrative structures. This heightened level of engagement can lead to a more memorable and impactful reading experience. Future literary criticism must develop cross-media analytical skills to understand and interpret the interactions and synergies between different modes of expression. Critics need to be adept at analyzing not just the written word but also visual aesthetics, sound design, and multimedia integration. This requires a broadening of traditional literary analytical frameworks to include theories and methodologies from art criticism, musicology, film studies, and digital media studies. One of the key challenges in multimodal literary criticism is interpreting how different modes interact and influence each other within a single work. For example, how does an accompanying soundtrack shape the reader's perception of a written scene? How do visual elements complement or contrast with the textual narrative? Understanding these interactions is crucial for grasping the full meaning and value of multimodal works. Establishing criteria for evaluating the quality and effectiveness of multimodal literature is another important task. Traditional literary criticism often relies on established metrics for assessing textual coherence, thematic depth, and stylistic innovation. In contrast, multimodal literature requires new evaluative criteria that consider the integration and harmony of different media forms, the effectiveness of sensory engagement, and the innovation in blending multiple modes of expression. Addressing the challenges of multimodal literature requires interdisciplinary collaboration. Literary critics, artists, musicians, filmmakers, and digital technologists must work together to develop comprehensive analytical frameworks and methodologies. This collaboration can lead to a richer understanding of multimodal works and foster innovation in both literary creation and criticism.

Future research in literary studies will not merely engage in theoretical discourse but will be firmly rooted in the study of literary texts themselves. ELC has always placed great importance on textual analysis. Nie Zhenzhao's classification of texts into brain texts, material texts, and electronic texts provides a comprehensive framework for understanding the different dimensions of literary works. Brain texts

involve the cognitive processes and brain activities that occur when engaging with literature. Material texts refer to the physical manifestations of literature, such as printed books. Electronic texts encompass digital and online literary forms. This tripartite classification is particularly relevant in the context of AI literature, which often blurs the boundaries between these categories. The advent of AI literature brings with it a plethora of new literary forms and text types. These include interactive narratives, procedurally generated stories, and hybrid texts that combine elements of traditional and digital literature. Each of these forms presents unique challenges and opportunities for literary criticism. By focusing on the text itself, critics can explore how AI-generated works innovate within and transcend traditional literary boundaries. Text-based research is crucial for uncovering the unique artistic value of AI-generated literature. By closely examining the text, critics can identify the innovative narrative techniques, stylistic devices, and thematic explorations that characterize AI literature. This detailed analysis helps to appreciate the creativity and originality embedded in AI-generated works, highlighting their contributions to the literary canon. In addition to artistic value, textual analysis can reveal the ethical implications of AI-generated literature. By scrutinizing the themes and messages conveyed in these works, critics can assess their alignment with ethical principles and societal values. This is particularly important given the autonomous nature of AI creators, whose output may reflect biases or ethical considerations inherent in their training data. ELC thus plays a vital role in evaluating the moral dimensions of AI literature. The future of literary research lies in a return to the text, emphasizing rigorous and detailed textual analysis. ELC, with its long-standing focus on textual studies, is well-positioned to lead this endeavor. By utilizing advanced AI tools such as natural language processing and algorithmic analysis, critics can enhance the scientific rigor and precision of their work. This approach not only reveals the unique artistic and ethical significance of AI-generated literature but also ensures that literary criticism remains relevant and robust in the age of AI.

Robot literature and laboratory research will highlight the diversity and potential of AI literature. Robot literature is not only an application of AI technology in literary creation but also an important exploration of new models of literary creation. Su Hui's classification of robot literature provides a systematic framework for understanding the different types and functions of AI-generated literary works. This classification will include genres such as interactive narratives, procedurally generated stories, and AI-assisted creative writing. Each type showcases the unique capabilities of AI in generating diverse and innovative literary forms, highlighting the expansive potential of AI in literature. Robot literature represents

a significant shift in how literary works are created. Unlike traditional literature, which relies solely on human creativity, robot literature involves AI as a co-creator. This collaborative approach allows for the exploration of new narrative structures and styles that might not be achievable by humans alone. For instance, AI can generate complex branching storylines that adapt to reader choices, offering a more personalized and interactive reading experience. Through laboratory research, critics can gain a deep understanding of the principles and processes of AI creation, revealing the technical mechanisms and ethical issues behind it, thus providing scientific evidence and theoretical support for AI literary criticism. Liu Maosheng's laboratory research delves into the underlying principles of AI literary creation. By studying the algorithms and data models used by AI to generate text, researchers can uncover the methods by which AI mimics human creativity. This understanding is crucial for developing more advanced AI systems that can produce even more sophisticated and nuanced literary works. Laboratory research also sheds light on the technical mechanisms of AI creation. This includes the training processes for AI models, the types of data used, and the computational methods employed. By analyzing these aspects, researchers can identify the strengths and limitations of current AI technologies and work towards improving their capabilities. For example, understanding how AI models handle narrative coherence and character development can lead to enhancements in these areas, resulting in more compelling AI-generated stories. One of the significant contributions of laboratory research is its focus on the ethical implications of AI literary creation. This includes issues such as the originality of AI-generated content, intellectual property rights, and the potential biases present in AI algorithms. By addressing these ethical concerns, researchers can ensure that AI literature is created and distributed in a manner that is fair and just. For instance, examining the sources of data used to train AI models can help identify and mitigate biases, promoting the creation of more inclusive and representative literary works. Laboratory research provides empirical studies that form the basis for theoretical advancements in AI literary criticism. These studies offer quantifiable data on the performance and outputs of AI literary systems, which can be used to evaluate the artistic and ethical merits of AI-generated literature. For example, statistical analyses of narrative complexity and thematic diversity in AI-generated texts can provide insights into the creative potential of AI. The insights gained from laboratory research contribute to the development of robust theoretical frameworks for AI literary criticism. These frameworks incorporate findings from empirical studies to offer a comprehensive understanding of AI literature. They address key questions such as how AI-generated texts should be evaluated, what

constitutes originality in AI literature, and how to integrate AI literary works into the broader literary canon. These theoretical frameworks are essential for guiding future research and practice in the field of AI literature.

The rise of AI literature poses significant challenges to traditional narratology. AI-generated literary works exhibit unique characteristics in narrative structure, character development, and thematic expression, demanding a re-evaluation and adjustment of traditional narratological theories. AI-generated narratives often differ significantly from those crafted by human authors. As Shang Biwu stated, in the past, our ethical positions included the protagonists of the works and the creative subjects, all of which were human-centered. However, in AI narratives, the roles of the author, narrator, and character are all facing a new wave of reconstruction. AI systems can create complex, multi-layered plots with non-linear timelines and interactive elements. This dynamic approach to storytelling challenges traditional narratological frameworks, which typically analyze more linear and static narrative forms. In AI literature, characters may be generated and developed using algorithms that draw from vast datasets. This can result in characters that are unique and diverse but may also lack the depth and consistency found in human-created characters. AI-generated characters might exhibit unexpected behaviors or evolve in unconventional ways, requiring new methods of character analysis and interpretation. Critics must consider how these algorithmically developed characters fit into existing theories of character construction and development. Understanding the algorithmic processes behind AI-generated literature is crucial for modern narratology. This involves studying how algorithms create and manipulate narrative elements, and how these processes influence the final text. Integrating computational analysis with traditional narrative theory can provide deeper insights into the mechanics of AI storytelling. Meanwhile, Shang Biwu proposed that in the context of the nonhuman turn, AI literature, including narratives produced by nonhumans, should be reexamined. This allows us to effectively discuss issues related to the implied author, reliable narration, narrative communication, and ethics.

AI literature raises questions about aesthetic subjectivity, prompting critics to explore the role of AI as a creator and its ethical implications. One of the most profound questions posed by AI literature is the role of AI as an aesthetic subject. Unlike human authors, AI lacks personal experiences, emotions, and consciousness. Critics must consider what it means for an entity without subjective experiences to create art. Wang Songlin uses the example of Microsoft Xiaoice writing poetry to introduce the question of whether future artificial intelligence can possess its own emotional experiences and aesthetic sensibilities. He believes that to address

the issue of AI's aesthetic capabilities, scientific selection and brain text theory in ELC may offer a forward-looking solution for the ethical choices of future artificial intelligence. This involves examining the aesthetic value of AI-generated works and how they are perceived by human audiences. The ethical implications of AI as a creator are vast. This includes questions about authorship, originality, and the moral responsibilities of AI developers. Critics need to explore whether AI-generated works can be considered original and how intellectual property laws apply to these creations. Additionally, the potential biases in AI algorithms and their impact on literary production must be scrutinized to ensure ethical integrity in AI literature. The collaboration between human authors and AI systems introduces a new dimension to aesthetic subjectivity. This partnership can lead to innovative artistic expressions but also raises questions about the division of creative labor and the recognition of contributions. Critics must examine how these collaborative efforts influence the final artistic product and what it means for the concept of authorship.

The development of AI literature necessitates innovation in literary education and teacher competence. In advancing research and practice in literary education, Wang Zhuo discovered that science fiction possesses a unique dual attribute of humanistic and scientific literacy, a dual value not found in other literary genres. In the AI era, using linguistic arts to learn science has become increasingly important. Literature influences values, attitudes, behaviors, and social norms, and plays a crucial role in instruction and guidance, which is a fundamental viewpoint of ELC. To adapt literary education to the AI era, teacher training systems must also keep pace with the times. Zhang Xin believes that in the future of literary education and the cultivation of teachers' digital literacy, literature teachers may face many challenges. Educational institutions should provide continuous professional development opportunities for teachers, helping them update their knowledge, master the latest technological tools, and flexibly apply them in teaching. Through systematic training and practice, teachers can effectively fulfill their roles as educators and guides in the context of AI literature. Furthermore, teachers need to possess interdisciplinary knowledge and skills to organically combine science and literature, guiding students to appreciate literature while understanding scientific principles. AI-generated content provides rich material for teaching, but it also requires teachers to have critical thinking skills to guide students in properly viewing and analyzing this content. Teachers also need to have a high level of ethical literacy. In the context of AI literature, discussing the ethical and moral issues of works becomes more complex and important. Teachers must be able to guide students to consider the ethical issues behind AI-generated works, such as

author identity, copyright ownership, and moral responsibility, cultivating students' ethical awareness and social responsibility. By integrating the innovations of ELC, teachers can not only impart knowledge but also guide students in deep thinking, nurturing them to become well-rounded individuals with scientific literacy and humanistic spirit.

Conclusion

Nie Zhenzhao believes that artificial intelligence is no longer just in its early stages; it has already achieved significant practical results.¹ Therefore, we need to have a sense of urgency and recognize the profound impact that AI technology has already had on literary creation. As early as the 1990s, Marjorie Perloff wrote *Radical Artifice: Writing Poetry in the Age of Media* (translated by Nie Zhenzhao, 2013). The pioneering and leading thoughts in this book provided Nie Zhenzhao with considerable inspiration during the translation process. The discussions in the book on literary modernity and the multimodal representation and expression of literature are essential components of modern literary research. This experience not only demonstrates Nie Zhenzhao and his team's leading position in thought and practice but also provided valuable insights and inspiration through the translation. After twenty years of development, ELC has embraced the AI turn, which is not just a technological and theoretical innovation but also a significant breakthrough in the field of literary research. By exploring the ethical themes and moral judgments in AI literature, ELC offers new perspectives and tools for literary studies, promoting its continuous development in the new era. AI literary criticism not only meets the current and future needs of literary research but also has a profound impact globally. Through theoretical innovation and practical application, ELC will continue to play an important role in international literary research, advancing human literature's continuous progress and development. This turn signifies the need to continuously update and refine theoretical frameworks to keep pace with the rapid development of AI technology. As Nie Zhenzhao pointed out, ELC emerged from the crisis of the perceived uselessness of literary theory; it is a product of the struggle for the survival of literary theory. Looking back, ELC was not constructed on the foundation of literary aesthetic frameworks but was guided by scientific principles. It approaches literature with a scientific attitude, perspectives, theories, and methods. By exploring the scientific principles underlying the mechanisms of literary creation, it is dedicated to the reconstruction of interdisciplinary research

¹ See Nie Zhenzhao, "On the Neutral Network Machine Translation in the Age of Science," *Journal of Tianjin Foreign Studies University* 6 (2023): 1.

in literary theory. Through interdisciplinary collaboration and research, ELC will remain at the forefront of literary studies, addressing real-world ethical issues and providing scientifically and practically grounded theoretical support, thereby ensuring the relevance and effectiveness of literary criticism in the new era.

Works Cited

Chen Lizhen. "Rejuvenation and Innovation: The Past, Present and Future of Ethical Literary Criticism."

Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 3 (2019): 389-414.

聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。

[Nie Zhenzhao. *Introduction to Ethical Literature Criticism*. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

——. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." *Forum for World Literature Studies* 2 (2021): 189-207.

——. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." *Forum for World Literature Studies* 3 (2021): 383-398.

——: "论人的认知与意识",《浙江社会科学》10(2020): 91-100。

[——. "On Human Cognition and Consciousness." *Zhejiang Social Sciences* 10 (2020): 91-100.]

——: "论语言与文本",《杭州师范大学学报》(社会科学版)5(2023): 46-51。

[——. "On Language and Text." *Journal of Hangzhou Normal University (Humanities and Social Sciences)* 5 (2023): 46-51.]

——: "论科学时代的机器翻译",《天津外国语大学学报》6(2023): 1-10。

[——. "On the Neutral Network Machine Translation in the Age of Science." *Journal of Tianjin Foreign Studies University* 6 (2023): 1-10.]

——: "人文研究的科学转向",《文学跨学科研究》4(2022): 563-568。

[——. "The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 4 (2022): 563-568.]

聂珍钊、王松林编:《文学伦理学批评理论研究》。北京:北京大学出版社,2020年。

[Nie Zhenzhao and Wang Songlin, eds. *A Study on the Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism*. Beijing: Peking UP, 2020.]

帕洛夫·玛乔瑞:《激进的艺术:媒体时代的诗歌创作》,聂珍钊译。上海:上海外语教育出版社,2013年。

[Perloff, Marjorie. *Radical Artifice: Writing Poetry in the Age of Media*, translated by Nie Zhenzhao. Shanghai: Shanghai Foreign Language Education Press, 2013.]

The Self Shrouded in Fog: The Layers of My Ethics in the Novel *A Trip to Mujin* and the Movie *Decision To Leave*

Jin Sunghee

Abstract: There are quite a few discussions about the connection between Park Chanwook's film *Decision To Leave* and novelist Kim Seungok's *A Trip to Mujin*. *A Trip to Mujin* is a novel that has already been adapted into movies and dramas four times, and it is evaluated that the narrative and expression style of modern Korean novels have changed since this novel was published. The male characters in *A Trip to Mujin* and *Decision To Leave* are all successful middle-class elites who are socially recognized and have stable families. They meet a special woman in what is described as the fog space of Mujin and Ipoh and face an urge to break away from the existing world or to break it down. However, *A Trip to Mujin*'s man escapes from the aspect of his desire self and returns to the family and workplace where his wife is located, returning to the ethical me. A man in *Decision To Leave* tries to get away from his existing life and plan a future different from that of a woman who resembles his original self, but fails. In the two works, the men are the figures of Odysseus who met the Siren, and they are characters who wander between his wife and other women and explore themselves. Accordingly, *A Trip to Mujin* and *Decision To Leave* can be said to be works with the characteristics of making women the other for the modern male subject who impulsively and returns between social ethics and personal ethics. The thoughts and wandering toward the existence of this modern male subject are effectively reproduced through an artistic device called fog, and the aspects of the multi-layered self are revealed or concealed in the fog, which can be said to be a metaphor for human conflict and agony toward me.

Keywords: *A Trip to Mujin*; *Decision To Leave*; fog; personal ethics; social ethics

Author: **Jin Sunghee** is Associate Professor at the Department of Chinese Language and Literature, Soongsil University (Seoul 06978, Korea). Her recent research has mainly focused on Hong Kong and Taiwan films, as well as Chinese films in Hollywood (Email: xingxi1217@daum.net).

标题: 雾中的“我”：论小说《雾津纪行》和电影《分手的决心》中“我”的

伦理层级

内容提要：金承钰的小说《雾津纪行》数次改编成电影或电视剧，被评价为是改变韩国现代小说叙事及表现形式的标志性作品。与此同时，围绕朴赞郁的电影《分手的决心》的相关评论也不在少数。《雾津纪行》和《分手的决心》的男主人公都是得到社会认可、具有稳定家庭的成功中产阶层精英。他们在“雾”的空间遇到一个特别的女人，由此产生脱离现有世界的冲动。最终，《雾津纪行》的男主人公抛弃了欲望性自我，做出回归家庭和职场的伦理选择；《分手的决心》的男主人公则试图摆脱现有生活，与一个和自己相似的女性走向不同未来，但最终失败。在这两部作品中，男性们展示了如同遇到赛壬之后的奥德修斯形象，在妻子和其他女性之间徘徊。《雾津纪行》和《分手的决心》通过将女性他者化，描绘了在社会伦理和个人伦理之间挣扎之后，试图重新回归自我位置的现代男性主体。这种现代男性主体对存在的思考和彷徨，通过“雾”这一艺术装置被有效再现。“雾”体现或隐藏了多层自我，隐喻着人类对多重自我的苦恼。

关键词：《雾津纪行》；《分手的决心》；雾；个人伦理；社会伦理

作者简介：陈性希，韩国崇实大学中文系副教授，研究兴趣包括中国台湾和香港的电影以及好莱坞中国电影。

1. *A Trip to Moojin* and *Decision To Leave* and “Fog”

The novel *A Trip to Moojin* (1964) is evaluated in the history of Korean literature as a novel that formed a fundamental question about what kind of traits modern humans have.¹ The movie *Decision To Leave* (2022) is said to have provided an excellent answer to the question of how to express the reflection on existence and between the social and the individual in Korean film history in an aesthetic way.²

1 It is said to be a characteristic of Kim Seungok's novel in the 1960s, which uses individual emotions and conflicts as a motif and organizes works through the process of self-reflection of characters and creates living characters without big events and revealed lessons. Starting with Kim Seungok, who was evaluated as achieving the Miracle of Postwar Literature and Personal Discovery through the novel, it can be said that Korean novels have attempted to discover new styles and individuals. See Hyesun Chung, “Study on *A trip to Moojin*—Read *A trip to Moojin* again as a Space of Intemperance and Irresponsibility,” *Mokwon Korean Language Literature* 7 (2002): 225-226.

2 *Decision To Leave* topped the “Movie of the Year” category, which was selected by Korea's leading film magazine Cine21, with overwhelming support. *Decision To Leave* which received unusually enthusiastic and even support from 35 critics and reporters, “was praised as a film that went under the lullaby of Park Chanwook's film, a film that marveled at its smooth making and completion, and above all, the best joy that contemporary film audiences could feel.” See Song Kyungwon, 22 Dec. 2022. Available at: http://www.cine21.com/news/view/?mag_id=101690. Accessed 17 July 2023.

In all cases, contemporary art is bound to be reproduced by paying homage to, referring to, and transforming the superior art of the previous era. As director Park Chanwook has mentioned many times, the movie *Decision To Leave* was inspired by the song “Fog” by Korean singer Jung Hoonhee. However, this popular song was created with a motif from Kim Seungok’s novel *A Trip to Moojin*, and *A Trip to Moojin* was also adapted into the movie *Fog* by director Kim Sooyong in 1967.¹ To put it bluntly, *A Trip to Moojin*, a novel about a middle-aged man’s experiences and his thoughts toward me in a small, nameless provincial town in Korea, gave birth to a movie and song “Fog” will be.

Under these circumstances, we can assume that the cultural and aesthetic device “Fog” would have had a significant impact on the narrative completion of *A Trip to Moojin* and *Decision To Leave*. The impulse and anguish of a male intellectual who stayed for a while in any local area of developing countries, who only regard the abundance of fog as special, leads to the psychology of a reunited lover in Ipoh, the fictional city of *Decision To Leave*.

I walk alone on this fog-filled street
 One shadow of you who was affectionate that day
 When I think of something, it’s a past memory
 Still, a heart that yearns for it
 where did that person go
 Lonely in the fog, I go endlessly (From the lyrics of the song “Fog”)

“You” and “that person” appearing in the lyrics of the popular song “Fog” above can be interpreted as having the same context as the self of another layer of the person in *A Trip to Moojin* and *Decision To Leave* or the object they love. This is because the two works contemplate the conflict between the multilayered selves in the confrontation between the modern society and the individual.

Accordingly, *A Trip to Moojin*, which has been analyzed by many commentators since the birth of the work, but still contains various questions, and *Decision To Leave*, inspired by this novel, are related to “Fog,” an aesthetic mechanism similarly reproduced in the two works. Therefore, I think analyzing the two works in relation to

1 *A Trip to Moojin* has been adapted into a film on three occasions. *Fog* (Filmed by Sooyong Kim, 1967), *Ecstasy* (Filmed by Moonjin Cho, 1974), and *Fog after Cloudy Weather* (Filmed by Pilhyong Im, 1986) are the works. In 1967 *Fog*, Seungok Kim wrote the scenario, and as the original author, he tried to visualize the novel as it was. See Yujung Kang, “Cinematization of Novels, Principles and Processes of Media Conversion—Focusing on *A Trip to Moojin* by Seungok Kim and *Fog* Filmed by Sooyong Kim,” *The Studies of Korean Literature* 40 (2013): 273.

fog is an attempt to deeply understand the narrative that the works want to convey.

2. A Special Perspective on the Divisive Subject

The reason Kim Seungok's *A Trip to Moojin* drew attention at the time was how a male intellectual's ego division between his desire and reality was controlled in the era of state-led development, in which the people were voluntarily called as subjects under the banner of modernization, and in the end, it is a novel that looks at it from a unique point of view without directly "criticizing" the re-embeddedness of the national discourse. *Decision To Leave* features an educated detective with the responsibility of defending society. This detective who feels alive at the scene of a murder case is a man who faithfully fulfills his duties and tries to live with human dignity.

Male characters in both works meet women who shake them. *A Trip to Moojin*'s main character, Yoon Heejoong's wife, is the daughter of the chairman of a mid-sized company and is trying to convince her shareholders to promote Yoon Heejoong to her directorship. Yoon Heejoong is a man with a sense of defeat who thinks that he has risen in the world thanks to such a wife. And In Moojin, his hometown, he shares her affection with Ha Insook, a female teacher who looks like him. Ha Insook wants to get out of Moojin, a city that is poor and impoverished in many ways, where only ignorant and cowardly men live. She asks Yoon Heejoong to take her to Seoul. However, even if Yoon Heejoong shares her affection with Ha Insook, she does not have the courage to abandon her life so far and build a new future with her. So he leaves from Mujin alone. Song Seorae in *Decision To Leave* is a woman who is likely to appear in pseudo-noir genre films featuring her detectives and beautiful women. In these genres of films, the woman suspected of her murder is a femme fatale who seduces her detective, and her man becomes agitated by her and withdraws her suspicions. But in the end, the woman was the murderer and the man blames himself for trusting the woman.

However, *A Trip to Moojin* and *Decision To Leave* look at the above-mentioned characters with a certain degree of "criticism removed." Yoon Heejoong lives with the guilt that he was not drafted because his mother hid it when all his friends from his hometown went to the battlefield when he was young. However, he is even more fortunate to meet his current wife, whose father is the chairman of a mid-sized company, and thinks that he is living with good results without any effort. Yoon Heejoong, who is oppressed by such a sense of social debt, thinks that Ha Insook is an educated and capable woman, but is not getting a chance in Moojin. Her is a woman who awakened her dormant instincts. So Yoon Heejoong agonizes over her act of salvation, which is to take her back to her Seoul. However, the reality of the

society they belong to is grim. So he leaves her with a letter from her.

Detective Jang Haejoon, who has been investigating crime suspects humanely, meets Song Seorae, a Chinese woman who is suspected of pushing her husband to death in the mountains. However, Jang Haejoon feels a crush on her when he sees that Song Seorae, who doesn't seem to be able to be so confident even by her background, is confident and not intimidated by anyone. Song Seorae feels special feelings for Jang Haejoon, who treats her more politely than anyone she has ever met in Korea. Moreover, Song Seorae's feelings for Jang Haejoon deepen after learning that Jang Haejoon covered up her crime even after learning that he killed her husband. However, Song Seorae commits suicide because Jang Haejoon said that he felt that his whole life was "collapsed" because he loved Song Seorae. to protect his world.

In this way, the characters in the two works can be said to be imperfect human beings living in modern times. Whether they are economically stable and socially recognized men or unrecognized women, they are wandering and swaying beings in the reality they encounter while meeting other opposite sexes other than their wives and husbands. At this level, there is room for dismissing the two works as stern reports that point out social reality. In the novel, Yoon Heejoong was born in a poor area, but received a little more education from her than others there. He met a wealthy woman in Seoul and joined the rich life of that woman, so she herself lived in the upper class. However, Ha Insook, who was educated at the same level as Yoon Heejoong, has difficulty entering the central realm of her society because she is a woman. She lives courting snobbish local men so she can survive in Moojin.

Jang Haejoon considered the job of detective a vocation and tried to maintain a relationship as a happy middle-class husband even by using artificial means. Then, feeling empty in his life, he meets a Chinese woman who came to Korea to keep his mother's will after overcoming countless adversities. She was able to enter Korean society safely thanks to her husband, a vicious civil servant, but she was beaten by him, suffered by her moneylender, and remarried to a third-rate gangster to survive. Such a Song seorae has never met a humane person. So, feeling love for Jang Haejoon, who respected her, she wants to enter another world even by killing herself in order to be remembered by him for a long time.

These *A Trip to Moojin* and *Decision To Leave* contain warmth toward the absurd reality and the people living in it. There is a sentiment in the two works to look at imperfect human beings as they are, because Kim Seungok and Park Chanwook did not try to observe the lives of human beings with ethical standards. Of course, there have been numerous novels and films that have described human

beings as beings who have multilateral desires and are easily shaken by the manifestation and suppression of those desires. However, the appearance of Kim Seungok in the dominant atmosphere of Korean literary world in the 1960s and the fact that Park Chanwook maintained an “ambiguous attitude” toward humans throughout the film are rare in the history of literature and film. Kim Seungok explores women’s desires that he did not want to see at all at the time, and Park Chanwook elaborately reveals the love between Jang Haejoon and Song Seorae, which seems impossible to achieve due to the concealed solid social structure, with tricks that twist the characteristics of cinematic genres.

The characters in these two works are similar to each other, so if you compare the novel and the movie with each other, you will be able to feel the specialness of the characters more deeply. Yoon Heejoong from *A Trip to Moojin* and Jang Haejoon from *Decision To Leave* appear to be living successful lives on the surface, but internally they have unresolved desires. However, they are weak men who cannot properly express their desires even when they encounter an opportunity to release them. Yoon Heejoong wanted to save Ha Insook from Moojin, and Jang Haejoon wanted to save Song Seorae from her reality, but eventually ran away from them. Song Seorae and Ha Insook also resemble each other. Song Seorae has the courage to become the second suspect in Haejun’s murder case because she wants to stay in Jang Haejoon’s world, and Ha Insook is an intelligent woman who senses that even in an uneasy meeting with Yoon Heejoong, an incident that can change her life can occur. In this context, we can lean on Sartre’s discussion and think about the relationship to others. Sartre argued as “The other is indispensable to my existence, and equally so to any knowledge I can have of myself. Under these conditions, the intimate discovery of myself is at the same time the revelation of the other as a freedom” (qtd.in Sojeong 214).

In this way, the two works tried to reproduce the self-division of modern subjects with a calm gaze by drawing characters who are fascinated by the magic-like time that unexpected events throw into human daily life and yet try to escape.

3. “Space of Fog” and Its Meaning

Decision To Leave begins with Jang Haejoon driving through the foggy city of Ipoh. Ipoh is home to the nuclear power plant where her wife works, and also where Jang Haejoon settles in to sort her confused mind after breaking up with Song Seorae. Along with Ipoh, the city of fog, the film is also obsessed with the popular song “Fog.” There are several scenes where the caregiver Song Seorae asks her grandmother to play the song “Fog” on her cellphone, and Jang Haejoon sings along

to “Fog.” The fog serves as a metaphor for the relationship between Jang Haejoon and Song Seorae. The fog effectively depicts the ambiguity of the relationship between Jang Haejoon and Song Seorae, who love each other but cannot accurately grasp the other’s intentions, and the imperfection of communication between the Chinese Song Seorae and the Korean Jang Haejoon due to language restrictions. And it symbolizes uncertainty that is not easily revealed. *A Trip to Moojin*’s Moojin is a place with severe fog. Moojin, an underdeveloped area and hometown that keeps reminding me of painful memories from childhood, is still an uncomfortable space for Yoon Heejoong. There, however, her servant, who resembles her, sings a song called “Fog.”

In the two works, the space of fog, Ipoh and Moojin, is where the lethargy and division of incomplete beings are directly expressed. Yoon Heejoong escapes from Seoul, where social status and responsibility are granted, and reveals her emotions and desires in the fog of Mujin. Jang Haejoon resents Song Seorae for committing the second murder to meet him and promises to conduct the investigation transparently, but he cannot stop his desire for her. Song Seorae commits suicide by burying herself on the beach in order to live forever in Jang Haejoon’s heart, leaving him with an unsolvable case. Unlike such a “space of fog,” Seoul can be said to be a space of deterrence that makes it impossible for humans to emit their multifaceted consciousness within the established system and forces them to exist only as functional humans.¹

A functional human is a human who must acquire the principle of identity that occurred in the process of modernization, and is a human who has eliminated the desire of a multi-layered subject. Individual subjectivity is bound to be excluded in a space where each person’s role and stance is captured in the social structure. In this dimension, Moojin and Ipoh which lack such clearly woven norms of identity, are spaces that inevitably accompany anxiety, confusion, and reservations with the possibility of choosing another principle. For Yoon Heejoong, Moojin is a “reserved” space where he cannot easily choose whether to build a new relationship with Ha Insook, leaving behind the world he belonged to. For Song Seorae, Ipoh is a chaotic space where the irony of having to make herself into nothing (无化) in order to protect the man she loves. Therefore, the fog of Mujin and Ipoh conceals the deviation of the characters and at the same time mediates instability and chaos.

We can interpret the characteristics of space in these works of Moojin and Ipoh based on the perspective of place ethics. In particular, we can analyze the

1 See Jean Baudrillard, *Simulacra and Simulation*, translated by Taehwan Ha, Seoul: minumsa, 2001, 118.

ethical problems of the place expected from Nie Zhenzhao's ethical literary critic. "Ethical literary criticism in the context of the 'ethical turn' of literary criticism strives to restore the essential relationship between literature and ethics. Moreover, through developing beneficial concepts for ethical analyses of literary texts, rather than simply declaring the restoration of ethical values of literature, ethical literary criticism can provide a practical methodological toolbox for the current subject matter; ethics of place represented in literary texts" (Taehee 629). Accordingly, the discussion on the division of the ego and ethics in Fog's space will be conducted in more detail in the next chapter.

4. Multiple Selves Expressed in Fog

4.1 Sirens and the Odysseus Impulse

Quite a number of commentators have compared Yoon Heejoong in *A trip to Mujin* to Odysseus, who endured the siren's temptation and completed the voyage.¹ Korean literary critic Shin Hyeongcheol said that although Yoon Heejoong had the urge to be with Ha Insook, recovering his suppressed desires in daily life in Moojin, what brought him back to his place was his wife who took the place of his mother. And he said that characters corresponding to Odysseus (Yoon Heejoong) - Siren (Ha Insook) - Penelope (wife) appear in *A Trip to Moojin*. In this regard, Peter Brooks spoke in this Odysseus myth and Freud's *The Psychology of Dreaming of an Infidelity* (1912) combining the image of a neurotic man trying to double the object of sexual relations. He said that there is a master plot of "a structure that is delayed by another woman who represents the urge to die for the progress of the narrative that his wife is waiting for at the end" (Son 179).² Freud said that if there is a desexualized woman symbolized as a mother in men's twisted sexual fantasies, there is a sexually

1 The Siren, who appear in Greek mythology, are described as having the upper body of a woman and the lower body of an eagle or mermaid, and have a beautiful voice. The sailors who heard the siren's song were seduced by the sound and jumped into the sea. However, Odysseus, returning home after the fall of Troy, listens to the advice of her witch Circe to overcome the temptations of her sirens and blocks her sailors' ears. But he decided to listen to her song, so he tied himself to the mast and told her crew not to loosen the straps at all costs. Hearing the siren's voice, Odysseus was impelled to release his chains, but the sailors tied him tighter each time, and eventually Odysseus escaped the siren's temptation and was able to finish the voyage safely. Feeling insulted by Odysseus, the Sirens commit suicide.

2 Sigmund Freud, "The Psychology of Dreaming of an Affair," translated by Kim Jong-il, *Three Essays on Sexual Desire*, Open Books, 1996, 169. Quoted from page 171 Jeongsoo Son, "A Study on the Process of Feminist Transition of the Odysseus Masterplot in Modern Korean Narrative—Focus on the Counter Narratives against "Mujingiheng (雾津纪行)," *The Journal of Korean Fiction Research* 78 (2020): 169-193.

objectified woman on the other hand.¹ Ironically, the plot of Odysseus overcoming the seduction of another woman, the Sirens, in order to return to his wife Penelope is also the background in which Adorno and Horkheimer explain the birth process of a rational subject in *Dialectic of Enlightenment* (1947).²

The myth of Seyren and Odysseus “impulse and resistance to desire and death” is also in line with Nie Zhenzhao’s discussion that the Sphinx, with the human head and lion body, constantly learns between rational thinking and animal impulses, fiercely resisting instinct, and reborn as an ethical being. Human nature is the essential distinction between man and animals, with ethical consciousness being its external manifestation. When man acquires ethical consciousness, he is able to tell good from evil. As discussed earlier, this is best exemplified in the story of Adam and Eve. Likewise, the animal factor, though incompatible with the human factor, is not identical with the nature of animals. It refers to human beings’ instinct common to all animals with natural will and free will being its external manifestation. Animal instincts are essentially different from humans’ in the sense that they bear no moral consequences, while human’s natural will (motivated by libido) and free will (embodied as desires) are constrained and regulated by rationality and morality. As such, the dialectical relationship between animal factor and human factor indicates on the one hand the evolution process of human from apes, and on the other hand, rationality and morality are not born but acquired with constant learning and strenuous practicing. In this sense, man exists as an ethical being.³

The relationship between Song Seorae and Jang Haejoon in *Decision To Leave* can also be read that way. The siren seduces men with her voice and makes them jump into the sea. Although not sea, Song Seorae’s first husband falls down the mountain by her (she pushes) and dies, and her second husband drowns in a swimming pool. There is a scene where Jang Haejoon says to his wife, “Maybe I am a man in the sea,” and Jang Haejoon is also fascinated by Song Seorae. In addition, just as the shape of a siren is a human upper body and an animal lower body, Song Seorae is also a character symbolizing a “double self.” In the movie, Song Seorae’s clothes look blue-green to Jang Haejoon and green to others. Just as the sirens lure men with their voices, Song Seorae uses her voice to put Jang Haejoon to sleep, who suffers from insomnia, and her voice is recorded in a mixture of Chinese and Korean. (*In A trip to Moojin*, it is Ha Insook’s song that leads Yoon Heejoong to

1 Ibid., 171.

2 Ibid., 171.

3 See Nie Zhenzhao, “Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection,” *Forum for World Literature Studies* 3 (2021): 388-389.

wander between the ethical desire of social self-maintenance and the ego chasing the impulse.) As such, Yoon Heejoong and Jang Haejoon are both Odysseus who are full of wisdom enough to deceive the god who knows well that he must return to where his wife is, but he is the type of person who shows impulsiveness in front of other women.

However, the two Odysseus show different options. Yoon Heejoong of *A Trip to Moojin* responds to Ha Insook's song, but in the end shows a model of realistic self-pursuit, escaping from the temptation of fulfilling desire and returning to her wife. Yoon Heejoong receives a message from his wife from Seoul, leaves Moojin before the day she wants her to come back, and quickly decides to delete her urge for Ha Insook, unites his divided selves and is reborn as a social subject. It is only when he is in Moojin that Ha Insook can be a siren to seduce Yoon Heejoong. On the other hand, Jang Haejoon of *Decision To Leave* accepts and rejects the fact that Song Seorae intervened in his life, but eventually accepts the conclusion that he cannot return to his wife and breaks away from the reality principle and plans a future with Siren. However, Jang Haejoon's siren chooses the impulse of death rather than love with him. Song Seorae, a seiren who has the fate of not dying, who has to seduce a man to the end and lead him to death, follows Jang Haejoon to Ipoh, but fails to win his heart and dies.

It is difficult to see Yoon Heejoong, who recovered her ethical self, and Jang Haejoon, who gave up being a social being, as ultimately different male figures in that they both succumbed to the temptation of the siren. It is because they make the siren and her wife the other in the process of choosing between moral recovery and self-pursuit. Because Odysseus in the two works confirms himself and re-establishes his world only through women (Siren and Penelope), and in the end, he cannot judge himself without a situation related to women. Accordingly, it can be seen that the modern subjectivity of men in *A Trip to Moojin* and *Decision To Leave* is achieved through their experiences with women.¹

Decision To Leave is not a direct adaptation of *A Trip to Moojin* like director Kim Sooyong's film *Fog*, but uses *A Trip to Moojin* as the starting point of its creation. *A Trip to Moojin* and *Decision To Leave*, the main characters are intellectual males living in modern times divided by the capitalist spirit and system. *Decision To Leave* and *A Trip to Moojin*, more than any other works by Park Chanwook and Kim Seungok, show conflict aspects of how a male subject who wants to survive in a capitalist society controls his individual impulses and tries to

1 See Mihyeon Kim, "Modernity and Femininity—Focused on Seungok Kim's Novels," *Korean Novel Society, Poetics of Modernity in Korean Novels*, London: Yerim Communications, 2003, 389.

conform to the discourse of modernization. However, if you go deeper into the two works, you can see the difference in the emotional temperature of the male subjects who are integrated into the dominant social order. Moojin from *A Trip to Moojin* and Ipoh from *Decision To Leave* are spaces where intellectual men try to “deviate from the orbit” in order not to completely converge to the social norms surrounding them. By the way, Yoon Heejoong of *A Trip to Moojin* divides only in Moojin, escapes from that place, and returns to the modern subject again. On the other hand, Jang Haejoon of *Decision To Leave* more actively thinks about and accepts the crack between himself and reality, and maintains a critical gaze toward reality. Borrowing Derrida’s discussion, it is safe to view Park Chanwook’s achievements as a “Supplement” for the original work.¹

However, both works completed narratives in which a man reestablished himself as a social subject or escaped by cutting himself off from the space in which he fell in love with a woman who was an affair partner or not. In this “male-centered narrative,” the world of women is not realistically described and is represented like a surplus. Accordingly, the pursuit of ethics and impulses shown by the two male subjects cannot be dismissed as a complete ethical narrative in that it metaphorizes the universality of psychoanalysis and otherizes and damages women.

4.2 Conflict Between Individual and Social Ethics

As mentioned above, *A Trip to Moojin* and *Decision To Leave* tried to express the unethical love between men and women and the deviation of the subject through the artistic mechanism of “Fog” in a space where development has been delayed in modernization. This reminds us that the final judgment of the time when the two works appeared is “Ego and Ethics.” And in this context, both works show that “Ethics” is prioritized over “Ego.” Nie Zhenzhao, who has been researching literary ethics criticism as an important methodology of literary research in China, said the following in *Ethical Literary Criticism* (2014). From the point of view of criticism of literary ethics, all literary texts are close to the description of the moral experience of human society, and there is an ethical structure called the “ethical line” in all literary texts. And each “ethical knot” within the literary text is pierced or connected by the “ethical line” to form a complete ethical structure of the text. Thus, literary ethics criticism has the task of discovering the process of ‘ethical knots’ formed on the “ethical line” or resolving already formed “ethical knots” through the deciphering of literary texts.² From this perspective, Moojin and Ipoh

1 See Sohyoun Kim, “Soo-yong Kim’s Literary Film Mist (1967), Adapting Seungok Kim’s Novel *The Foggy Town*, is a Rare Case Dealing with the Contemporarin,” *Film studies* 43 (2020): 57.

2 See Nie Zhenzhao, *Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism*, Beijing: Peking University Press, 2014, 7-10.

can be assumed to be “ethical knotted spaces” that produce the wandering and stability of the subject between personal or social ethics.

In *A Trip to Moojin*, Seoul is symbolized as a space of success. Yoon Heejoong, who has constantly put off his desires in order to learn the ethics of society and family and to acquire a greater ethical self, ironically asks what kind of true me he really is in his hometown of Moojin, which he so desperately wanted to leave. Accordingly, Yoon Heejoong, who walks an ethical tightrope between the upright me and not-me in Moojin, also describes modern men who try to grow while enduring the disappearance of their true selves. Yoon Heejoong’s divided life is closely related to the contradiction of the modern system itself.¹ *A Trip to Moojin* relegates Yoon Heejoong back to society, as if reminiscent of the “imaginary solution” that modern Europe’s “cultured novels” offered a solution to the problem of individual socialization. This is an index that embodies the indirect bourgeois ethics and shows that the modern figure² Yoon Heejoong considers the ethics mediated by the group between society and the individual as the main index for establishing his identity. Yoon Heejoong was able to get a glimpse of the duality of myself trying to satisfy the ideals of modern society and my desire to follow my inner desires in Ha Insook of Moojin. So, Ha Insook is like a fog that cannot be grasped even though it fills the space tightly, she is a person who symbolizes a multi-layered ego that is difficult to grasp about the reality and is like a mirror that reflects Yoon Heejoong.

On the surface, *Decision To Leave* seems to aim for the victory of “Individual ethics” (Song Seorae and Jang Haejoon’s love completion). However, through the death of Song Seorae, whose basis is ambiguous in the relationship between the two, a fundamental question is being raised about what kind of stance a human being between the social self and the desiring self should take and live. In the movie, Jang Haejoon gives up the social welfare of being an honest detective and maintaining a middle-class family in order to complete his ethics toward himself. Song Seo-rae’s suicide to make Jang Haejoon live “properly” as before he met herself is also like a dissonance that stands out in the flow of the film. The incomprehensibility of such excess makes us question whether the social deviation of Jang Haejoon and Song Seo-rae’s affair is to recover the desire of the ego.

Accordingly, *A Trip to Moojin* and *Decision To Leave* tell us that the desire to confirm the true self of human beings buried in social ethics is a universal

1 See Sehwa Yim, “Growth and Aporia of the Young: Focusing on Son, Chang-Seop’s *The Road*,” *The Learned Society Of Korean Modern Literature* 41 (2013): 496.

2 Ibid., 496.

phenomenon that transcends the times. Nie Zhenzhao holds that “moral behaviors and moral regulations are based on the premise of ethical identity, which restricts the subject of moral behaviors to the extent, sometimes, of mandatory degree through ethical taboos”(264). However, the two works break away from the representation methods and narratives of the media at the time and destroy the illusion that only pursuing sincerity is the truth in the confrontation between the social self and the individual self. It is because human beings cannot inevitably live in a space where instinctive desires and collective truth are clearly separated, so “essential me” cannot be established easily, and it is said that trying to confirm it is futile.

Concluding the Discussion

From the above, it can be seen that the symbolic device of “Fog” in the novel *A Trip to Moojin* and the movie *Decision to Leave* appears repeatedly as a spatial background for novels and movies or as a metaphorical mechanism. Of course, the difference between the two works is inherent. However, the points of reflection toward humans and society that are aimed at through the texts of *A Trip to Moojin* and *Decision to Leave* are very similar to those that are not in the novel and are derived from the characteristics of the film.

While *A Trip to Moojin* created an edification that created the conflict and wandering of the ego between individual and social ethics in the village of fog, Mujin, *Decision To Leave* reconstructs the rhythm of Mujin in the novel with a visual metaphor. The nonlinear timeliness cast in the fog space contrary to the linear and mechanical spatiality of Seoul in the novel is reproduced in the Ipo in the film, and the male characters in the two works begin to question themselves in the fog space and have an unstable relationship by projecting themselves to the other woman. Through the representation device of novels and movies that describe unstable relationships with others, the modern subject is described as a ghost-like being floating in the reality where oppression and incompleteness of the past and present collide. It’s like Hamlet, who faced the line of ethical tragedy after his father’s original marriage appeared.

Hamlet continuously wanders (perfectly) his revenge for his father, who was killed by his uncle, and the ethical problems he faces. In the article “Ethical Literary Criticism: Basic Theory,” Nie Zhenzhao will probably commit serious incest if Hamlet takes revenge on his king and mother. But he noted that if he gave up, he would not be able to fulfill his moral duty and responsibility to avenge his father's death.¹ For

¹ See Nie Zhenzhao, “Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory,” *Forum for World Literature Studies* 2 (2021): 192.

Nie Zhenzhao, it was a very important issue in ethical criticism that humans agonized between the issues of good and evil, duty and pleasure, loyalty and freedom.¹

Therefore, Yoon Heejoong of *A Trip to Moojin* living in the era of noble reason and Jang Haejoon's suspension and hesitation in the *Decision To Leave* are in line with Hamlet's hesitant behavior because he cannot solve the ethical dilemma.

Accordingly, the two works can be seen as effectively identifying the unstable self by relying on the ethical system surrounding the individual and society or not under the mechanism of "Fog."

Works cited

- Baudrillard, Jean. *Simulacra and Simulation*, translated by Ha Taehwan. Seoul: minumsa, 2001.
- Chung, Hyesun. "Study on *A trip to Moojin*—Read *A trip to Moojin* again as a Space of Intemperance and Irresponsibility." *Mokwon Korean Language Literature* 7 (2002): 225-226.
- Kang, Yujung. "Cinematization of Novels, Principles and Processes of Media Conversion —Focusing on *A Trip to Mujin* by Seungok Kim and *Fog* Filmed by Sooyong Kim." *The Studies of Korean Literature* 40 (2013): 271-297.
- Kim, Mihyeon. "Modernity and Femininity—Focused on Seungok Kim's Novels." *Korean Novel Society, Poetics of Modernity in Korean Novels*. London: Yerim Communications, 2003. 359-389.
- Kim, Sohyoun. "Soo-yong Kim's Literary Film *Mist* (1967), Adapting Seungok Kim's Novel *The Foggy Town*, is a Rare Case Dealing with the Contemporarin." *Film Studies* 43 (2020): 55-79.
- Kim, Taehee. "Ethics of Place in a High-Mobility Era from the Perspective of Ethical Literary Criticism." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 4 (2021): 622-637.
- Nie Zhenzhao. *Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism*. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.
- . "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." *Forum for World Literature Studies* 2 (2021): 189-207.
- . "Ethical Literary Criticism: Sphinx Factor and Ethical Selection." *Forum for World Literature Studies* 3 (2021): 388-389.
- Oh, Sojeong. "The Ethics of Empathy: Subversion of the Gaze and Performativity in Kim Jiyoung, Born 1982 and It's Okay, That's Love." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 2 (2021): 205-218.
- Son, Jeongsoo. "A Study on the Process of Feminist Transition of the Odysseus Masterplot in Modern Korean Narrative—Focus on the Counter Narratives against 'Mujingiheng (雾津纪行)'." *The Journal of Korean Fiction Research* 78 (2020): 169-193.
- Tihanov, Galin. "On the Significance and Originality of Nie Zhenzhao's Ethical Literary Criticism." *Forum for World Literature Studies* 4 (2022): 559-562.
- Yim, Sehwa. "Growth and Aporia of the Young: Focusing on Son, Chang-Seop's *The Road*." *The Learned Society Of Korean Modern Literature of Modern Korean Literature* 41 (2013): 495-531.

1 See Galin Tihanov, "On the Significance and Originality of Nie Zhenzhao's Ethical Literary Criticism," *Forum for World Literature Studies* 4 (2022): 560.

什么是世界文学：

《“世界文学”推原》与世界文学研究反思

What is World Literature: *Tracing the Origins of “World Literature”* and Reflections on World Literature Studies

刘 舫 (Liu Ge) 李 云 (Li Yun)

内容摘要：全球化的日益加深带来了“世界文学”概念的反复阐释与重新定义，与此同时也掀起了重写世界文学史热潮。如何理解“世界文学”是世界文学史重构的重要前提，然而什么是世界文学一直是文学研究领域悬而未决的难题。方维规的《“世界文学”推原》一书以史明理，史论互证，以概念史的方法追溯了“世界文学”的动词属性，将世界文学理解为自由的精神贸易，强调世界文学就是交流本身，为把握世界文学的地方性与普适性这一至关重要的张力关系，打开了新的思考方式；为化解世界文学的中心与边缘这一核心论争，提供了新的反思视角，成为重写世界文学史新的问题入口。

关键词：《“世界文学”推原》；世界文学；重写世界文学史；概念史；

作者简介：刘舫，湖南大学文学院教授，主要从事比较文学与世界文学研究；李云，湖南大学外国语学院博士生，研究方向为中西科幻文学。本文为国家社科基金重大招标项目“外国文学原理研究”【项目批号：02BWW009】的阶段性成果。

Title: What is World Literature: *Tracing the Origins of “World Literature”* and Reflections on World Literature Studies

Abstract: The deepening globalization has led to repeated interpretations and redefinitions of the concept of “World Literature,” simultaneously igniting a fervent wave of rewriting world literature history. Comprehending “World Literature” stands as a crucial prerequisite for reconstructing the history of world literature. However, the essence of what constitutes World Literature has remained an unresolved enigma within the realm of literary studies. Fang Weigui’s book, *Tracing the Origins of “World Literature”*, sheds light on this matter by illuminating historical truths and engaging in mutual verification between history and theory. Employing a conceptual history approach, the book delves into the verbal dimension of “World Literature,” conceptualizing it as a free exchange of spiritual goods. It underscores that World Literature is the exchange itself, thereby opening up fresh avenues of

thought to grapple with the crucial tension between the locality and universality of World Literature. Moreover, it offers a novel perspective for reflecting on the central debate surrounding the center and periphery of World Literature, serving as a fresh starting point for rewriting the history of world literature.

Keywords: *Tracing the Origins of “World Literature”*; world literature; rewriting the history of world literature; conceptual history;

Authors: **Liu Ge** is Professor at the College of Chinese Language and Literature, Hunan University (Changsha 410082, China). Her research interests are English poetry and comparative literature (Email: liugeeee@163.com). **Li Yun** is a PhD candidate at the School of Foreign Languages, Hunan University (Changsha 410082, China), with the research direction of Chinese and Western Sci-fi literature (Email:1327514676@qq.com).

自20世纪90年代起,“世界文学”这一概念被不断刷新和定义,成为“新近关于‘全球文学’国际论争的焦点”(方维规3)¹,同时也掀起了“重写世界文学史”热潮,这是文学研究尤其是比较文学研究应对学科危机与全球化日益加剧的种族、阶级、文化冲突的有力尝试。如何把握世界文学地方性与普适性的张力?如何避免世界文学的西方中心主义?如何看待世界文学的中国声音?方维规的《“世界文学”推原》一书,以概念史的方法追溯了“世界文学”这一概念的起源与发展历史,将“世界文学”理解为“自由的精神贸易”(93),认为“世界文学”是一个行为范畴,是一种实践,是指交流本身。通过强调“世界文学”的动词属性回应了围绕歌德以来关于“世界文学”的概念论争,以严谨的治学态度和充实的事实依据矫正了学者关于歌德“世界文学”概念的误读与以讹传讹现象。全书以史明理,史论互证,呈现了“世界文学”在全球化过程中正在进行以及还未完成的概念史,打开了理解“世界文学”概念的正确方式,为“重写世界文学史”如何处理地方性与普适性、中心与边缘等核心议题提供了新的反思视角与问题入口。

一、辨识正误：当代“世界文学”争论与误读

什么是世界文学?关于这一问题的探讨,学界众说纷纭、莫衷一是,莫雷蒂(Franco Moretti)直言:“世界文学并非一个客体,而是一个难题”(Moretti 46)。世界文学之所以成为一直以来悬而未决的难题,源于学者对歌德“世界文学”概念的不同理解甚至误读。

莫雷蒂借助进化论阐述了他对“世界文学”这一概念的理解,他认为存在两种不同的世界文学。一种是由不同的地方文化交织而成的世界文学,另

1 本文有关《“世界文学”推原》的引文均来自 方维规:《“世界文学”推原》(北京:文化艺术出版社,2021年)。以下引文仅标注页码,不再一一说明。

一种是被国际文学市场合为一体的世界文学（世界文学体系），前者突出作品的内在多样性，后者则强调作品的同一性。¹

方维规认为，莫雷蒂“将世界文学与国际资本主义相提并论”，“显示出二元对立的思维模式”，“莫雷蒂所理解的并不是歌德的世界文学”（6）。卡萨诺瓦（Pascale Casanova）同样表现出了这种二元对立的认知模式，“她把世界文学看作文化资本相互倾轧和排挤之所”（13），她所认为世界文学实为“‘世界文学’定义的把持者所接受的文学文本的汇集”（季进 48），同样与歌德所谓的“世界文学”概念相去甚远。

达姆罗什（David Damrosch）在《什么是世界文学？》一书中通过“流通”、“翻译”、“生产”展现了世界文学的形成过程，认为世界文学是指那些“在其原文化之外流通的文学作品”（Damrosch 4）。达姆罗什看到了世界文学在传播过程中的不平衡性。方维规也指出：“迄今的实际状况是，西方国家的大多数读者对其他地方的文学所知无几；尤其是那些用弱势民族语言写成的作品，至少是没被译成英语或是其他重要欧洲语言的作品，它们在世界上传播并成为世界文学是极其困难的”（11）。基于文学传播的实际情况，达姆罗什呼吁学者拓展视野，关注欧洲之外的“其余”文学，以期改变这种状况。但在米勒（Gesine Müller）看来，达姆罗什关于世界文学的概念虽然强调了翻译和接受的意义，但最终还是落入了中心和边缘两极的窠臼。²对此，方维规则提出了不同见解。他通过考察达姆罗什关于世界文学的各种研究，认为米勒的评价有失公允，这是将“‘其余’这一欧洲中心主义的遗产与关注‘其余’混为一谈”（11），体现了其治学之严谨。

与米勒对达姆罗什关于“世界文学”的误读一样，学界关于歌德与世界文学的关系以及对歌德“世界文学”概念的理解也存在诸多误解。方维规指出，“我们常能见到一些脱口而出的说法，例如：歌德是‘世界文学’一词的创造者，首次提出这个概念；又如：歌德是一个真正的世界主义者，具有全球视野。从已经发现的材料来看，这些说法都是靠不住的，但却流传很广”（2）。再比如有学者笃信马克思、恩格斯提出了世界文学构想，倡导世界文学。方维规认为这也是站不住脚的。翻阅卷帙浩繁的马克思、恩格斯著作，“世界文学”字样仅见一次，没有足够的史料佐证马克思、恩格斯倡导世界文学。以上种种误解，究其原因，大多源于缺乏深入研究，浅尝辄止后以讹传讹、人云亦云。

要弄清楚世界文学究竟指什么，歌德与世界文学的关系究竟如何，首先就要追溯“世界文学”这一概念产生的历史与文化语境，这就需要概念史了。方维规正是在丰富的史料基础之上借助概念史这一研究方法，从“世界文学”产

1 参见 Franco Moretti. “Conjectures on World Literature,” *Distant Reading*, London: Verso, 2013, 46.

2 该观点参见 Gesine Müller, “Einleitung: Die Debatte Weltliteratur-Literaturen der Welt,” edited by Gesine Müller, *Verlag Macht Weltliteratur: Lateinamerikanisch-deutsche Kulturtransfers zwischen internationalem Literaturbetrieb und Übersetzungspolitik*, Berlin: Tranvia-Walter Frey, 2014, 7.

生的历史语境出发，还原了“世界文学”这一概念的真实面貌，厘清了围绕“世界文学”展开的诸多争辩与误解，清晰展现了“世界文学”这一概念的变化及发展轨迹。

二、索真推原：考古“世界文学”概念史

方维规指出，“‘世界文学’概念不只拘囿于自己的实际意义，它还连接着更为宽阔的历史和体系语境，同其他一些近代以来与‘世界’二字组合而成的重要概念密切相关”（27）。概念史主张“要么弄清某个词语的不同意义层面，要么查明某个概念的不同称谓”（方维规，《什么是概念史》36）。不少学者将歌德看作是“世界文学”一词的创造者，这是误解。他们只看到了这个词的实际意义，却忽略了对同“世界”二字组合的其他概念的特定语境考察，概念史的研究方法在这里找到了优越性。如果我们着重研究“世界文学”历时意义嬗变的连接点，就会发现，早在歌德之前，维兰德（Christoph M. Wieland）就用“世界文学”这个词指称贺拉斯时代的修身养成，即世界见识。¹虽与歌德所说的“世界文学”含义有所不同，但也相去不远，因此，方维规提出，“没有理由仍然把世界文学一词看作歌德之创”（20）。

即使歌德不是“世界文学”这一词的创造者已成既定事实，也有学者坚持“世界文学”是在歌德那里获得了世界主义语义，原因大多基于1827年歌德发出了的“世界文学时代”口号。方维规认为，这一判断仍显轻浮，早在1773年，施勒策尔（August L. Schlözer）在他的《冰岛文学与历史》一书中就提出这个概念，并给“世界文学”注入了普世主义的含义。²与此同时，赫尔德（Johann Gottfried Herder）的民族主义思想也激发和促进了歌德关于“世界文学”这一概念的形成。民族文学是构成世界文学的重要组成部分，世界文学为民族文学提供了重要的参照系，两者相辅相成、缺一不可。方维规认为，赫尔德的著作“明显体现出民族文学与世界文学的关系”（26），“若无赫尔德，这个概念在歌德那里或许不会获得如此重要的意义”（27），因此，方维规将赫尔德也视为“世界文学的精神先驱之一”（26）。除此之外，施莱格尔兄弟对于世界文学的结构性思考，“都在很大程度上启发了歌德的世界文学概念”（62）。虽然施莱格尔兄弟并没有用到“世界文学”这个术语，但其著作中常见的世界复合词早已包含了世界文学现象。

采用概念史的方法追溯“世界文学”这一概念的起源与发生，可以发现，“世界文学”这个概念在歌德之前就已形成。虽当时还未获得深刻的含义，但已具备世界主义的语义。要弄清楚什么是世界文学，不能忽略“世界”或“世界文学”在特定语境中的概念化过程，不仅应追溯歌德之前关于“世界”或

1 参见方维规：《“世界文学”推原》，北京：文化艺术出版社，2021年，第110页。

2 施勒策尔在《冰岛文学与历史》一书中将“冰岛文学”与其他七种“大”文学相提并论，以此给“世界文学”注入了普世主义的含义。参见August Ludwig von Schlözer, *Isländische Literatur und Geschichte*, Göttingen, Gotha: Dieterich, 1773, 1-4.

“世界文学”的有关论述，探讨其特定语境中的具体含义，同时还应考虑与“世界文学”有关的民族文学对歌德提出“世界文学”构想的影响。“若以为此前概念不符合歌德概念的深度和广度或者用法，或与歌德的设想不同，从而忽略不计，这至少在概念史分析中是反常的”（62）。方维规以严谨的治学态度和科学的概念史研究方法追溯了“世界文学”这一概念的生成及发生语境，矫正了学界关于歌德与世界文学关系的些许谬论，为“世界文学”等概念研究树立了新的典范。

由于歌德并没有形成系统的世界文学理论，其关于世界文学的论述“都只是简短提及而已，且有不同说法，不乏矛盾之处”（方维规，“理不胜辞的‘世界情怀’”54），这就导致了后人对歌德的“世界文学”概念有着不同的理解和偏重。方维规指出，“歌德之后，1848年革命之前的世界文学首先是一个交往的概念，时常出现在社会和政治讨论中，后来才逐渐发展为文学史的研究对象，将目光转向文学经典的构建”（110）。总而言之，“世界文学”这一概念发展至今，经历了“注重世界文学交流”到“指向文学经典本身”的意义转向，这源于不同视角对歌德“世界文学”的独特理解，也与文学概念本身的变化息息相关。

三、概念辨析：“世界文学”作为“自由的精神贸易”

以概念史的研究方法追溯世界文学产生的历史背景与文化语境，我们能清楚地厘清一个事实：今人所理解的“世界文学”与歌德所倡导的“世界文学”毫不相干。固然，正如众多学者所言，世界文学是一个变化的概念，或者说是一个正在形成中的概念。今人围绕世界文学普适性与地方性的论争以及认为世界文学不应体现欧洲中心主义的批判介入，使得“重写世界文学史”和“中国（非欧洲）文学走出去”的呼声日益高涨。到底什么才是适合时代发展的“世界文学”概念？我们有必要重新审视和分析歌德所构想的“世界文学”。

如前文所说，今人所理解的“世界文学”大多指的是那些超越时代，具有特定审美价值的文学经典的集合。如莫雷蒂提出的世界文学与世界文学体系指向了文学作品本身，达姆罗什将“在其原文化之外流通的文学作品”（Damrosch 4）称为世界文学。克罗夫特（Alexander Beecroft）强调，世界文学是“全世界的语言艺术产物”（Beecroft 189）。中国学者方汉文提出，“世界文学归根结底就是世界各民族文学的差异性与同一性并存，是全球化的多元文学呈现”（方汉文 51）。与歌德所阐释的“世界文学”概念不同，在他之后的学者大都将世界文学作为文学作品的诗学概念，其意义与“总体文学”或是“世界的文学”相近，但与歌德所构想的世界文学概念相去甚远。方维规指出，“‘世界的文学’这个概念虽然还勾连着世界文学的‘经典性’，却是一种全然不同的想象和纲领”（4）。

如果说在歌德 1828 年前的早期言说中，“世界文学”还只是某种意义上

的空想模式，那么在1830年的《席勒评传》序言中，歌德已经将“世界文学”确定作为一种指向各国民族交流的行为模式，即“自由的精神贸易”（转引自 方维规，《“世界文学”推原》42）。方维规指出，“歌德几乎所有的世界文学用词基本上不是指作品本身，而是一种现象、一种态度、一种行为、歌德的世界文学用词在很大程度上具有动词性，即他喜用的精神贸易，也就是今人常说的对外交流、开展国际文学活动”（68）。在歌德看来，经济的全球化也将带来了文学的普遍化，精神贸易就与商品贸易一样，强调的是各民族之间的对话与交流。与今人将世界文学理解为经典的集合不同，歌德的世界文学指向的是一种行为，一种过程，他所呼唤的世界文学时代实际上是对开展广泛的国际文学交流的一种美好诉求。

从歌德呼唤世界文学时代起，他所倡导的世界文学就指向了国际交流和相互接受等行为和现象，这是歌德作为德意志和欧洲办刊人的身份决定的。尤特（Joseph Jurt）指出，“歌德1827-1831年间的世界文学话语显示出正在形成的世界文学的三条路径：首先是翻译，其次是通过研究以及文化刊物获得信息，最后是不同的国家作家、译者之间的交往”（转引自 方维规，《“世界文学”推原》104）。歌德特别注重“借助自我在他者那里的映照（……）来达到更新和升华的自我认识”（转引自 方维规，《“世界文学”推原》76）。1861年，歌德创办的《艺术与古代》杂志成为其广交文友、切磋交流的重要领地。之后，他在《环球杂志》等刊物与卡莱尔（Gerhard R. Kaiser）等作家的相互交流，以及与斯达尔夫人的交往，“直接导致歌德说出‘世界文学’”（100）。文学期刊的世界文学行为不仅成为歌德更新和升华自我的重要领地，也让他看到了“出自世界文学的最大好处”（109），找到了世界文学交往的理由和目的。

方维规通过扎实的文献爬梳，再次挖掘了歌德“世界文学”概念的时代意义。他指出，“我们今天对与世界文学的理解和想象不是歌德彼时的认识，他所倡导的世界文学是国际交流和相互接受等现象”（66）。与今人理解的世界文学不同，歌德所设想的世界文学，指向的是文学的国家交流，强调的是民族之间的相互对话、调适和提升，而“绝非指称整个世界的文学，并且他的世界文学理念，所指既非数量亦非品质，既不包括当时所知的世界文学，也不涉及各种民族文学的经典作品”（40）。如果我们把世界文学理解为文学在世界的交流，将世界文学视为一种行为，一场运动，一个过程，那么当下许多围绕世界文学讨论的难题就会迎刃而解。

回顾历史，无论是20世纪80年代掀起的“重写文学史”还是21世纪以来，以美国学术界为主导的“世界文学史的新建构”，始终都在围绕一个问题展开争辩：“世界文学是谁的文学？莫雷蒂提出的“文学进化论”，卡萨诺瓦提倡的“文字世界共和国”都在一定程度上展现了中心文学与边缘文学的对立状态。在此影响下，重写世界文学史成为反对欧洲中心主义批判性介

入的重要途径。然而如果理解当初歌德所谓的“欧洲文学亦即普遍的世界文学”（转引自 方维规，《“世界文学”推原》106）实指“文学在欧洲世界的交流”（73），这场争辩多少会显得有点不合时宜。歌德强调世界文学的动词性，世界文学不是谁的文学，而是文学在世界的交流、对话与影响。因此，可以说“世界文学并不存在，而是在发生”（弗莱泽 174）。总而言之，世界文学没有国族归属，亦不可能成为谁的文学。在当前“重写世界文学史”“中国文学走出去”等研究热潮下，重新审视歌德世界文学这个概念的真正内涵，或许有助于我们找回世界文学研究的“魂”。

Works Cited

- Beecroft, Alexander. "World Literature without a Hyphen: Towards a Typology of Literary Systems." *World Literature in Theory*, edited by David Damrosch. West Sussex: John Wiley & Sons, Ltd, 2014. 180-191.
- Damrosch, David. *What is World Literature*. Princeton: The Princeton UP, 2003.
- 方汉文：《比较文学学科理论》。北京：北京师范大学出版社，2011 年。
- [Fang Hanwen. *Theory of Comparative Literature*. Beijing: Beijing Normal UP, 2011.]
- 方维规：《“世界文学”推原》。北京：文化艺术出版社，2021 年。
- [Fang Weigui. *Tracing the Origins of "World Literature"*. Beijing: Culture and Arts Publishing House, 2021.]
- ：“理不胜辞的‘世界情怀’：世界文学的中国声音及其表达困境”，《探索与争鸣》11（2016）：54-58。
- [—, "The Unjustifiable 'World Sentiment': The Chinese Voice of World Literature and Its Expression Dilemma." *Exploration and Contention* 11 (2016): 54-58.]
- ：《什么是概念史》。北京：生活·读书·新知三联书店，2020 年。
- [—, *What is a History of Concepts*. Beijing: Life, Reading, and New Knowledge Sanlian Bookstore, 2020.]
- 季进：“关于概念、类别和模糊界限的思考——罗鹏教授访谈录”，《南方文坛》5（2018）：40-48。
- [Ji Jin. "Reflections on Concepts, Categories, and Fuzzy Boundaries: Interview with Professor Luo Peng." *Southern Literary Forum* 5 (2018): 40-48.]
- 马蒂亚斯·弗莱泽：“世界文学的四个角度——读者、作者、文本、系统”，张帆译，《思想与方法：地方性与普适性之间的世界文学》，方维规编。北京：北京大学出版社，2017 年，第 174-185 页。
- [Matthias Fraser. "Four Perspectives on World Literature: Reader, Producer, Text and System." Translated by Zhang Fan. *Ideas and Methods: World Literature Between Locality and Universality*, edited by Fang Weigui. Beijing: Peking UP, 2017. 174-185.]
- Moretti, Franco. *Distant Reading*. London: Verso, 2013.



Published by
Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited
Hong Kong

ISSN 2520-4920

